

The atmosphere was getting tenser by the day and the pressure was rising. It was as if there was gunpowder in the air.

Once Ye Xinhuo started making his way towards Donghai, the air would explode!

There were many people from the north entering Shengcheng again. They had completely forgotten what Jiang Ning warned them about the last time.

Who would care about what a dying man said?

There were even some families secretly discussing how to split the resources. They clearly had no regard for Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning was only the leader of a small city's illegal circle and had nothing to do with the Jiang family of the north. So who would still fear him?

Jiang Ning wasn't bothered by any of this at all.

He wasn't nervous or worried at all. He still lived the same way as he always did.

He slept early, woke up early, ate breakfast prepared by Lin Yuzhen, sent Lin Yuzhen to and from work, accompanied her to the hot spring and the spa.

The only difference was that Su Mei had bought a bigger blanket for them. She was afraid that someone would catch a chill while sleeping at night if the blanket was too small.

Day after day passed like that.

The tenth day!

Today was D-day!

"Ye Xinhuo is coming!"

"He's already left the north and he'll reach Donghai today!"

"Let's go watch! Let's go watch how Jiang Ning dies!"

"HAHAHA, Jiang Ning, you were so arrogant in the past, today you will meet your end!"

The duel was to take place on a little offshore island just off Donghai's port. Brother Gou were all waiting there in the morning.

They didn't prevent anyone from coming forward. They even provided several boats to ferry the spectators who wanted to watch the duel.

Those people from the north had to pay \$500,000 for a ticket!

"He's already going to die and he still wants to make money?!"

"PFFT! I'll row my own boat!"

"\$500,000?! That's bloody daylight robbery!"

Brother Gou couldn't be bothered, the ticket price stood at \$500,000 a pop. Did these people think they could watch Jiang Ning fight without paying?

Did they think that Jiang Ning's appearance fees were so low?

Jiang Ning hadn't died yet, so nobody dared to make trouble in Donghai. So of course Brother Gou and his brothers weren't going to be polite to them either.

In order to see Jiang Ning get killed by Ye Xinhua, they all held it in and took the money out. Brother Gou immediately wrote them a ticket and let them board a boat towards the tiny island.

As he watched the boats bring the people across, Brother Gou counted the total number of tickets sold and nodded. "That's enough money to clean up the water pollution in the east side of the city. Seal the port! Nobody is to come through!"

"Brother Gou, then what's going to happen when they come back from the island?"

"Hoho, the return ticket is going to be expensive. Each one has to pay \$1 million. There are a few rivers we need to settle in the south, but we're short of some cash."

Those who refused to buy return tickets could spend the rest of the year on the island.

The sea breeze was billowing fiercely!

There was a small piece of land cleared out for spectators, and it was packed.

The strong sea breeze blew so hard that they could barely open their eyes. But nobody left the place and were all quietly waiting for the moment where Jiang Ning would meet a terrible end!

"Why aren't they here yet?"

"Damn it, it's freezing here! Why the heck did Ye Xinhuo choose this godforsaken place?!"

"There are fleece blankets for sale over there, but they're going for \$100,000 each! That's daylight robbery!!"

There were people cursing and swearing among the crowd. Jiang Ning was someone who was going to die soon but his men were still trying to earn money now? Once Jiang Ning was dead, how long could these men hold onto the money for?

They would have to spit everything back out almost immediately!

"He's here! Ye Xinhuo is here! That's the Luo family boat!"

Someone suddenly started shouting.


A yacht came sailing in from afar. Ye Xinhuo stood at the front of the yacht like a straight pole.

He stood there as if he was nailed to the deck of the boat. The sea breeze howled as it blew against him, but he remained unmoved.

This man was really a highly skilled martial artist!

Jiang Ning was dead meat!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

The yacht cut through the waters at high speed. Ye Xinhuo stood right in front as the waves lashed to the side, and looked as though he was riding on the waves!

Everyone on the island was in a daze as they looked at him.

Was he... was he still human?

That was a really terrifying thing to behold.

Ye Xinhuo was in a turquoise long robe that flapped loudly in the wind. His well defined face was filled with coldness and was ready to murder someone.

Before the yacht could dock itself, Ye Xinhuo stepped down hard on the boat such that the front sank into the water.

He then leapt into the air and landed on the shore.

One could tell that Ye Xinhuo was definitely a formidable one from this move alone.

After all, he was a famous and reputable martial artist in the north.

"Ye Xinhuo is here!"

"A skilled fighter! A truly highly skilled fighter!"

"Simply amazing! What an incredible entrance!"

Ye Xinhuo walked over and everybody stood aside, as if they didn't even dare to stand too near to Ye Xinhuo.

Who dared to go up against this martial arts grandmaster?

Ye Xinhuo had his head tilted upwards slightly and couldn't be bothered with any of these people.

He didn't care for anybody present here.

He only had one aim today, and that was to kill Jiang Ning!

He was going to kill Jiang Ning in front of all these people and show the Luo family's might!

The people around him started chattering around him, while Ye Xinhuo walked to the middle of the battle arena. He looked around and snorted.

Everyone instantly quietened down.

They were left with nothing but the incessant blowing of the sea breeze.

"WHERE IS JIANG NING?!" Ye Xinhuo roared in a thunderous voice that made everyone's eardrums hurt.

He was so terrifying!

This voice seemed to be able to pierce through everyone's hearts and made their blood rush.

"Since you've already accepted my challenge, then why are you still hiding instead of appearing?!" Ye Xinhuo's voice was extremely loud, and he clearly wanted everybody to hear it.

Jiang Ning dared not come to the fight!

"I think he doesn't dare to come."

"Come to get killed? Would YOU come?"

"What a useless asshole. Jiang Ning is just a scaredy cat after all. I thought he really dared to accept the invitation. Looks like he's already escaped."

Everyone started murmuring among themselves, making snarky and sarcastic comments without holding back.

Whether Jiang Ning dared to come or not didn't matter, they had already decided on how it was all going to end.

If he came, then he was going to die for sure.

If he didn't come, then the reputation of Donghai being a forbidden territory was going to be destroyed by Ye Xinhuo today!

Ye Xinhuo placed his hands behind his back and stood like a straight pole as he allowed the sea breeze to blow against his long robe and it flapped loudly.

"Jiang Ning!" He started shouting again, "The time we agreed on has come! If you still don't appear, I'll take it that you've lost!"

"The one who loses doesn't get to live!"

It was written very clearly in the invitation that one side had to die today!

"Are you in such a hurry to die?"

Suddenly a voice spoke up from one side.

That was Jiang Ning's voice!

Everyone immediately turned to look in the same direction.

Jiang Ning was walking over at a leisurely pace as if he was walking in the garden behind his own house and not here for a battle of life and death.

He still dared to say something like that! Wasn't he being too complacent?

Ye Xinhua narrowed his eyes and looked at Jiang Ning walking towards him. Ye Xinhua started assessing Jiang Ning's ability in his heart as he watched him walk with steady steps and deep breaths.

He didn't look like much to Ye Xinhua.

Even when compared to Broken Sword, his presence was much weaker.


But even so, Jiang Ning had accepted his challenge. He had clearly overestimated himself!

"How boastful!" Ye Xinhua scoffed coldly. "But no matter how boastful you are, as long as don't have the ability, then you're still dead anyway!"

Jiang Ning walked to the battle arena and looked Ye Xinhua up and down.

He suddenly burst out laughing. "You? You're a highly skilled fighter? So the Luo family has groomed a person with just this standard. I'm a little disappointed."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls!

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Xinhuo's expression immediately changed as fury overflowed from his eyes.

"You're asking for it! You dare to challenge Ye Xinhuo like that! Jiang Ning, you're really too bold!"

"Ye Xinhuo! Kill him! Kill this audacious fellow!"

"Kill him!"

The crowd started yelling and shouting. They had been waiting for this moment for a long time.

Jiang Ning threw them a glance. This unfeeling gaze made everyone instantly feel a little nervous and nobody dared to talk anymore.

They didn't dare to offend Jiang Ning yet.

They had to wait for Jiang Ning to be a corpse before they could vent their anger.

"Enough of this nonsense! It's time, so make your move!" Ye Xinhuo raised his hand. "As your senior, I'll let you have a head start of three moves!"

Ye Xinhuo was sure that offending the Luo family was the worst decision Jiang Ning had ever made in his life. He was going to die today! Even after getting a head start of three moves, he was still going to die!

"You're letting me have a head start of three moves?" Jiang Ning's eyes narrowed and he laughed coldly. "If you can endure one punch of mine, then I'd admit defeat!"

"You're outrageous!"

Ye Xinhuo was furious. He had tried to humiliate Jiang Ning, but now Jiang Ning was trying to humiliate him!

After humiliating the Luo family and insulting Ye Kuang, now Jiang Ning wanted to do the same to Ye Xinhuo?

Endure one punch? Ye Xinhuo was ready to see how powerful this one measly punch from Jiang Ning was!

"Ok outrageous young one, come at me!" Ye Xinhuo roared angrily.

Jiang Ning's lips curled upwards, then suddenly he moved...

BOOOOOM!

The ground beneath Jiang Ning sank and the sand was blown away. The tremendous force caused the ground to vibrate.

Brother Gou and the rest were standing not too far away. All of them were focused on what was happening and nobody dared to be the slightest bit distracted.

Was Jiang Ning going to display the full extent of his abilities today?

There were very few chances for them to witness this, so they weren't missing it for the world!

Ye Xinhua's expression changed the moment Jiang Ning made his move.

Just this terrifying force alone told him that Jiang Ning wasn't simple.

But he had already agreed to endure one punch from Jiang Ning. So he couldn't possibly regret his decision in front of so many people.

"He's coming!"

Jiang Ning was moving way too quickly.

They were only five steps apart but there was only the sound of three steps. Each step was heavier than the last, and quicker than the last. He was so fast that you could only see a shadow slide across the ground...

Ye Xinhua's eyes narrowed violently.

"He's so powerful!" he exclaimed to himself.

Jiang Ning threw a punch.

That punch came right up to Ye Xinhua's chest in an instant. Jiang Ning's legs were like the roots of an old tree and firmly stuck into the ground!

The terrifying strength moved from his lower body upwards, through his torso and into his shoulder, his arm and finally his fist!

"That's too fast!"

Brother Gou exclaimed! They had barely seen anything!

That one punch had been delivered!

KEBBABOOOOM!



A series of blasts filled the air and many people quickly covered their ears because it felt as if their eardrums were going to break.

All this happened in a split second.

BOOM...

One punch! It was just one punch!

It was an explosive punch!

It was so fast, there was no way to defend yourself against it!

In the huge cloud of sand and dust, all they could see was that one figure went flying horizontally out, crashed heavily onto the ground, spewed blood from his mouth and started coughing violently.

His chest caved in and he had broken so many bones. The turquoise long robe he wore was dyed red from fresh blood.

The sea breeze soon blew all the sand and dust away.

When they saw that the one on the ground was Ye Xinhuo with a deathly pale face filled with terror, they all fell silent.

Nobody dared to even breathe too loudly.

Their faces were filled with disbelief, but there was more terror on their faces, as if they had just witnessed something deeply horrifying,

This...this was not possible!

This was definitely not possible!

How could Ye Xinhuo be unable to endure just one punch from Jiang Ning?

That was impossible!

"You are...you...you are...!!"

Ye Xinhuo's eyes were huge as he tried to point a finger at Jiang Ning but couldn't even lift his hand. He couldn't hide the terror in his eyes at all.

Ye Xinhua knew who Jiang Ning was now!

He knew who Jiang Ning really was!

But it was too late now.

How did it turn out to be him?

Why would this terrifying person appear in such a place?

The Luo family had actually offended this God of War. The Luo family was doomed!

Never mind himself or the Luo family – even if the really powerful families of the north offended this man, they were going to meet with a terrible end.

He was fearful, he was terrified, but most of all, he was regretful.

But all of this was too late.

He realized that Jiang Ning had reached a stage that he only dreamt about but could never reach.

"Nobody has ever let me make the first move before," Jiang Ning looked down at Ye Xinhua. "You're the first one. You should be proud of it."

Should he be proud of it?

It was something to be proud of. He had challenged the almighty God of War to come out and kill him. Nobody else was that brave, right?

If Ye Xinhua knew who Jiang Ning really was, he would never have set foot into Donghai!

Ye Xinhua continued to spray blood out from his mouth, as well as bits of his internal organs.

This punch alone had broken all his internal organs.

"I'm...I'm...happy to die...at your...hands..."

Ye Xinhua's lips trembled, "I...just...want to know...how much...of your strength...you used..."

Jiang Ning put up one finger. Ten percent.

Ye Xinhua's eyes widened immediately. Then he suddenly convulsed, and

stopped breathing after his face filled with bitterness and indignation turned to one side.

One punch killed Ye Xinhuo.

The entire place was silent.

It was deadly silent.

The entire battle took less than one minute.

How...how the hell was this even possible?!

That was Ye Xinhuo!

And it was especially shocking precisely because someone like Ye Xinhuo was killed by only one punch.

Brother Gou and the rest were shaking from their excitement.

So powerful! So strong!

They knew Jiang Ning was amazing, and they always wondered where his limit was.

But after watching Jiang Ning for themselves, he was still way beyond their imagination!

One punch!

It was still one punch!

Regardless of whether it was Explosive Dragon, or Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon, or even a highly skilled martial artist like Ye Xinhuo, Jiang Ning only needed one punch to kill them.

Clean and crisp!

Jiang Ning looked around but everyone immediately looked down and trembled. Nobody dared to meet his gaze.

They were afraid that Jiang Ning might remember their faces. They would be doomed!

This was the most terrifying thing they had seen in their entire life.

Jiang Ning killed Ye Xinhuo with one punch!

"I think I've said before that I would not allow anyone from the powerful families of the north to come to Donghai. Looks like some people don't seem to learn from their lesson."

Jiang Ning's loud and clear voice exploded in everyone's ears.

Suddenly many of them felt their legs shaking and they nearly collapsed.

Ye Xinhuo had been killed with one punch. What were they?!

Jiang Ning could kill them as easily as squashing an ant.

They suddenly felt that death was looming over their heads.

"Or you refuse to listen to what I say?"

Thud!

Someone fell to his knees.

And lay prostrate on the ground.

His face was plastered to the ground and didn't dare to lift his head at all.

"Have mercy on me! Have mercy!"

"Mr Jiang, please spare us! We were wrong! We were in the wrong!"

After that, many others began to kneel down and beg for mercy with trembling voices.

"We just came to watch and didn't make any trouble! We really didn't make any trouble!"

"Mr Jiang, you know best! I was forced to come here by Ye Xinhuo! I can't stand him at all, I'm glad you killed him off!"

"Ye Xinhuo deserves to die! The Luo family deserves to die!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Several people had started to desperately switch sides.

Jiang Ning looked at them with great disdain. He didn't care for these ants at all.

But if they had come to Donghai and he didn't teach them a lesson, it would be damaging to the authority Donghai had as a forbidden territory.

"Gou!"

"Yes Big Boss!" Brother Gou and the rest responded in unison.

"Break one leg each as a warning."

"Yes Big Boss!" Brother Gou and the rest responded.

All of them breathed a sigh of relief in their hearts when they heard that Jiang Ning only wanted to break one of their legs and didn't ask for their names. They started bowing profusely to thank him.

"Thank you Mr Jiang! Thank you so much Mr Jiang!"

"Mr Jiang is indeed magnanimous! Thank you! Thank you so much!"

It was such a strange scene. Who on earth thanked someone else for breaking their legs?

Jiang Ning didn't say anything else and left.

The little island was left with Ye Xinhua's dead body as well as a group of spectators who were still stunned. And then there was that group of people standing in line for Brother Gou and the rest to break their legs...

The news about Ye Xinhua being killed by one punch from Jiang Ning spread like wildfire.

The authority that Donghai had as a forbidden territory was even more shocking.

Those who were all prepared in Shengcheng immediately bought the first ticket out of Tianhai when they heard the news.

Who dared to stick around in this whirlpool?

Anyone who stayed was definitely going to die.

Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory was built on the bones of Ye

Xinhuo. Who dared to doubt this?

Zhou Hua had offended Donghai and disappeared overnight without a trace. The Lu family had tried to attack Donghai and three brothers had died at Jiang Ning's hands. And now, Ye Xinhuo, a famous highly skilled martial artist in the north, a legendary fighter who was reaching the grandmaster stage...

He too, had been killed by Jiang Ning! With just one punch!

Donghai was forbidden territory!

Jiang Ning was the king of Donghai!

The north was shaken up.

All those who initially had plans to enter Tianhai didn't even dare to dream of it now.

Some of them shuddered when they realized that if they had tried to attack earlier, the corpse on the little island would be one of theirs.

The worst hit was the Luo family.

Luo Yongqian sat in the living room and he was like a statue. He hadn't spoken in half an hour.

He kept denying the truth in his heart. This wasn't possible. This wasn't possible at all.

How could it be possible?

How could Ye Xinhuo die?

And he was killed by one punch?

That was definitely impossible!

Could that Jiang Ning be much more terrifying than Ye Xinhuo? That wasn't possible!

"Master," the butler of the Luo family clasped his hands. When he saw that Luo Yongqian had just gone into a daze for so long, he had to speak up. "I've already confirmed the news. Mr Ye is really dead."

Luo Yongqian's fingers trembled as he looked up with a start. He opened his mouth, but he didn't know what to say.

The Luo family had really suffered total defeat this time.

He knew that Tianhai would never have anything to do with the Luo family ever again.

All this was like a nightmare. It had been less than a month, but the Luo family had lost so much.

Now that even Ye Xinhuo was dead, he had no way of fighting with the other families.

He felt like he could already see the other families seizing this opportunity to swallow up his assets and force the family out of the north...

In this cruel part of the country, the Luo family was destined to fail.

"As for Mr Ye's body..." The butler asked, "How should we bring it back?"

Luo Yongqian didn't say anymore. His face was deathly pale and he just waved his hands to let the butler make arrangements. He was drained of all his energy and it was as if his soul had left his body.

"How did things turn out like this...why did they turn out this way..."

He couldn't understand it and he really couldn't accept it.

Jiang Ning's punch had not just smashed Ye Xinhuo to death. It had also smashed the Luo family to smithereens...



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning didn't make things difficult for the Luo family to take Ye Xinhuo's body away.

It was just one Ye Xinhuo from this insignificant Luo family. Jiang Ning had never been bothered by them.

In less than a day, all those who snuck into Tianhai disappeared. Not a single one dared to stay in Tianhai.

Everybody knew that anybody who still wanted to take down Tianhai's illegal circles in the near future could continue dreaming!

They had lost the chance to gain control of Shengcheng after the Luo family failed, so they had to think of another plan, or even wait for another chance.

Because there was a king here. A king who was more powerful than anyone else!

There were nearly ten powerful families in the north who were trying to fight for Shengcheng's illegal circle. They had come with great ambition, but they all returned with their tails between their legs.

Everyone was very well coordinated. Nobody dared to talk about such an embarrassing thing to others, and nobody dared to even mention Jiang Ning's name.

They only remembered in their hearts that this man existed, and he was a fearsome existence.

Shengcheng became calm and quiet again.

Lin Group's expansion into Shengcheng went very smoothly. Lin Yuzhen had managed several projects well and she was in an excellent mood.

Her aim wasn't to dominate the market but to make the market bigger.

She wasn't trying to snatch profits from others, but to make more profits to feed more mouths.

Initially many competitors in the industry were very worried when they saw how Lin Group was rising.

But after they heard what Lin Yuzhen said to them, they were so touched that they didn't know what to say.

Nobody had ever been as kind and as magnanimous as Lin Yuzhen!



Nobody had ever been of such excellent character and with such great foresight!

Lin Yuzhen finally got to relax after she got back to her home in Donghai.

She happily took a bath and smelled good. She changed into pink cotton pajamas and watched TV on the sofa.

Jiang Ning shifted over to where she was sitting and sniffed.

"Wifey, you smell so nice."

Lin Yuzhen blushed and quickly turned around. Lin Wen and Su Mei were both busy in the kitchen.

"Shush!" She placed a finger in front of her soft lips. "It's so embarrassing if Mum and Dad hear you!"

She shifted to the side some more to ensure a three feet distance between herself and Jiang Ning, but Jiang Ning shifted to the side and was back next to Lin Yuzhen again.

She didn't shift anymore. Jiang Ning was too thick skinned!

"Mum and Dad won't be bothered by us."

Jiang Ning didn't think much of this.

Couldn't he tease his own wife?

"Time to eat!" Su Mei called out as she took the freshly cooked dishes out along with Lin Wen.

"I just learnt a new dish today, Jiang Ning, come and try some."

Jiang Ning was like a cat and instantly sprang up from the sofa. He ran to the table, sniffed the dish and gave Su Mei a big thumbs up.

"Mum, did you hide away your five star chef license?!" He complimented her generously, "It smells so good, I know it's delicious even without tasting it!"

"You really know how to say nice things!" Su Mei blushed and she chased him off to wash his hands.

She turned around and said, "Yuzhen, take a bowl of rice for Jiang Ning."

Lin Yuzhen pouted.

She began to suspect that Jiang Ning was Su Mei's son, while she was the daughter-in-law. And she was the daughter-in-law that wasn't liked by the mother-in-law too.

But who would hear her out?

"Jiang Ning, eat a little more. I think you've been working too hard lately, you seem to have grown thinner."

"Come, let's have a drink together!"

Lin Yuzhen watched as Su Mei happily put food into Jiang Ning's bowl while Lin Wen drank and chatted with Jiang Ning. She was even sadder now.

Their daughter was sitting right here!

She had worked very hard too!

She was busy all day and running around all the time, while Jiang Ning was snacking and drinking tea in her office, or soaking in a hot spring or sitting in a sauna. What sort of hard work was that?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Muuuuuum..." Lin Yuzhen dragged her words out. "Can't you show some concern for your daughter?"

"Get some food for your daughter?"

"Have a drink with your daughter?"

Su Mei and Lin Wen both looked at Lin Yuzhen.

"The food's right in front of you. Take some yourself."

"Girls shouldn't drink so much, I won't drink with you."

Lin Yuzhen pouted and looked angrily at Jiang Ning.

"Come along now, your hubby will take care of you, alright? I'll take food for you and have a drink with you, ok?" Jiang Ning quickly replied with a grin on his face.

Lin Yuzhen had to admit defeat.

Jiang Ning's position in the house was higher than hers now.

After they had eaten, Su Mei dragged Lin Yuzhen into the kitchen to wash the dishes and chat with her.

"Jiang Ning, let's have a chat?" said Lin Wen with a smile.

"Sure."

They walked to the balcony. Lin Wen stuck his head back into the house to check, then put two fingers up.

"Give me one."

Jiang Ning took a pack of cigarettes out from his pocket and passed one to Lin Wen. "Dad, don't smoke so much."

"I just have one every now and then," laughed Lin Wen. "I've been so busy lately and I've been feeling rather stressed."

Jiang Ning knew that there were only those few things that men did to destress, so he didn't deny Lin Wen the cigarette.

He lit the cigarette for Lin Wen. He knew Lin Wen wanted to talk to him.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. They stood quietly at the balcony until they had

both finished smoking.

"What are your future plans?"

"What future plans?"

"Future plans – surely a grown man like you can't stick around Yuzhen all day, right?"

"That's exactly what I plan to do."

Lin Wen looked at Jiang Ning and Jiang Ning nodded seriously.

After a brief moment of silence, Lin Wen nodded and said, "Don't you dare bully my Yuzhen."

"She gets to bully me, never the other way round."

Lin Wen was assured when he heard this.

He looked at Jiang Ning and suddenly laughed. "You're so outstanding, don't tell me no other girl likes you?"

Lin Wen didn't believe that was true.

He could tell that Jiang Ning was no ordinary person. He had helped Lin Group to advance so quickly in such a short time, and he had made such a huge change in Donghai all by himself.

He had never seen anyone this outstanding before.

Was it possible for no other girls to like a man like this?

Lin Wen didn't think so.

But then again, a man like Jiang Ning probably didn't have eyes for an ordinary woman either.

"Now that you mention it, there really is one." Jiang Ning frowned slightly and laughed bitterly. "There's one very, very outstanding girl. She said she wanted to marry me when she was three years old, and said she would never regret it even if she died."

Lin Wen's expression changed immediately.

If Jiang Ning himself said she was very, very outstanding, then how outstanding was she?

"At least until now, I can't find a more perfect girl than her in the whole country," replied Jiang Ning directly. He could tell Lin Wen was curious.

Lin Wen's expression became worried now.

Such an outstanding girl insisted on marrying no one else but Jiang Ning?

Then what about Lin Yuzhen?

His own daughter was outstanding, and to him, she was the best daughter in the world. But how did she compare to this competitor?

"Then Yuzhen?" asked Lin Wen anxiously.

"That's why..." Jiang Ning didn't seem anxious at all. "...I'm going to groom Yuzhen and make her an even more outstanding lady. I'm going to make sure that all other women will feel ashamed of themselves in front of Yuzhen, and none of them will dare to harass her man!"

"I will only be Yuzhen's man!"

Jiang Yu's tone of voice was extremely serious and he wasn't joking at all. Lin Wen could tell.

His eyes started tearing up a little. He was so moved and so grateful. His lips moved but he didn't know what to say. In the end, he just patted Jiang Ning on the shoulder.

"Jiang Ning, thank you!"

"Actually, I should thank you and Mum." Jiang Ning smiled. "I want to thank you both for bringing up such an adorable girl."

He peeked into the house, then whispered into Lin Wen's ear, "Have you ever thought of becoming a grandpa?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Wen immediately started coughing violently and his face was all red when he heard this.

Become a grandpa?

Of course he thought of it.

But he didn't think that Jiang Ning was thinking about it too.

"Dear, are you secretly smoking again? I'm going to check later!" Su Mei's voice came from the kitchen before Lin Wen said anything.

Women had especially sharp hearing. As long as their husbands were doing something behind their backs, they could sense it immediately.

Lin Wen didn't dare to delay any further. He quickly waved his hands and ran into the bathroom to brush his teeth, otherwise he would have to sleep on the sofa.

Jiang Ning couldn't help but laugh.

This intelligent and bold Chairman Lin was so easily ordered about by Su Mei.

He wasn't going to become such a man.

"Jiang Ning? Did you smoke too?"

"I didn't!"

Jiang Ning cursed to himself and quickly ran to the bathroom to brush his teeth too.

At night.

In the room.

This new big blanket was so nice and warm.

Jiang Ning was well covered by the blanket and was more than half a foot away from Lin Yuzhen. She wasn't cold at all, but she was all curled up.

"Wifey, are you feeling cold?"

"No I'm not," Lin Yuzhen replied quietly with her back facing Jiang Ning.

"If you're not feeling cold, then why are you all curled up?"

"I'm cold," Lin Yuzhen replied.

Earlier in the kitchen, Su Mei had actually said that she got them a bigger blanket so that they won't be cold when they slept together.

She even said that men had a higher body temperature, so if Lin Yuzhen felt cold, she could hug Jiang Ning to sleep.

Was Su Mei really her own mother?!

"You're feeling cold?" Jiang Ning sounded a little concerned. "Then I'll hug you to sleep."

Before Lin Yuzhen could react, Jiang Ning shifted over and gently put an arm around Lin Yuzhen and pulled her into his embrace.

Lin Yuzhen was now like a kitten and didn't dare to move at all!

A warmth immediately covered her. Was that what Su Mei meant when she said that men have a higher body temperature?

It was so warm!

Lin Yuzhen didn't dare to move at all and she had stiffened up.

She could feel that she was curled up in Jiang Ning's embrace.

"Don't worry, I'll just hold you and you won't be cold anymore. Go to bed," whispered Jiang Ning.

Lin Yuzhen bit her lip and didn't dare to say a word.

She remembered what Su Yun told her the last time she came. She said that men always laid a trap like this. First they said they'd just hug you and won't touch you, then they would touch you. Then they would say they wouldn't kiss you, then...

Jiang Ning was really going down this path!

She suddenly felt a little nervous and a little scared. And somewhere deep in her heart, she had feelings of anticipation.

But while she was still feeling conflicted inside, she could hear Jiang Ning's even breathing next to her ear.

This fellow seriously just hugged her and fell asleep?

He was really asleep!

Lin Yuzhen scoffed quietly, "Do I lack charm or something? Tsk."

But she didn't dare to wake Jiang Ning, in case his animal instincts suddenly took over. She remained in his arms and fell asleep soon after.

The night went by quietly.

The next morning was still beautiful, and breakfast was still delicious.

After breakfast, Jiang Ning sent Lin Yuzhen to the office.

Lin Wen held a meeting to announce that he would remain in Donghai to oversee Lin Group's headquarters, while Lin Yuzhen would be in charge of expanding Lin Group's business into other cities.

This was to make Lin Yuzhen the one who would pave the way for Lin Group's expansion!

Lin Wen took the entire night to think about what Jiang Ning said.

Lin Yuzhen's competitor was too powerful, so while Jiang Ning was going to groom Lin Yuzhen, he was going to work hard as her father to make sure he prepared an excellent dowry for his daughter!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



Of course, Jiang Ning knew why Lin Wen had arranged things this way and didn't interfere with his decision.

In fact, Jiang Ning was filled with admiration for his father-in-law.

Lin Group's expansion team was soon decided upon.

Naturally, Lin Yuzhen didn't reject this decision either.

The projects in Shengcheng had already stabilized. The Lin Group projects had already started to profit after just two weeks, and that really made others see them in a new light.

Their projects also helped the entire industry to advance so that other companies could profit as well. This increased Lin Yuzhen's reputation very quickly.

She wasn't here to monopolize the industry and just wanted to increase the opportunities in the industry. Many seniors in the industry respected her and showed their support for her.

As for the environment in Shengcheng's illegal circle, Jiang Ning didn't need to do anything.

As long as he was still in Tianhai, Shengcheng's illegal circle knew what to do.

Everyone had been through so much over the past few months and they were very sure in their hearts that there was only one king in all of Tianhai. That king was Jiang Ning!

As long as Jiang Ning was around, nobody would dare to upset the order here.

Back at Masquerade Club, Jiang Ning was really getting addicted to the tea here.

Butler Zhao was now in full control of the place, and he restarted the information network that he had built. With Jiang Ning's support, the network became even more powerful and kept expanding.

"Mr Jiang, looks like Tianhai has settled down, and I have to say I really admire you," Butler Zhao said while pouring tea for Jiang Ning. "If I hadn't seen it for myself, I wouldn't have believed that the illegal circle could have existed in this manner."

This had completely overturned his knowledge and ideas about illegal circles.

Jiang Ning was using the stability of the illegal circle to influence the legal

circle. Once the illegal circle was stable, it would stabilize the legal circle. So once the environment was orderly, both economical developments and infrastructure would both improve tremendously.

What an amazing thing!

"Actually many people have thought about this before, just that they never got to do it." Jiang Ning took a sip of tea. "Master Fu thought about it before too."

There was a change in Butler Zhao's eyes. He knew that Master Fu had thought of doing this when he was younger, but he soon gave the thought up.

It was because Master Fu knew that he couldn't achieve this.

But when he first saw Jiang Ning, Master Fu felt like he was looking at himself when he was younger. He could see Jiang Ning's ambition and he could see Jiang Ning's capability!

And that was why Master Fu was determined to create a breach in the north even if it cost him his life.

One reason was to thank Jiang Ning for protecting his daughter, but the other reason was because Master Fu wanted to make that dream of his come true.

Master Fu's foresight as an older man in these circles was still the best.

"Zhao, in order to really achieve this dream, I'll need you to be around."

Jiang Ning raised his teacup.

Butler Zhao picked up his teacup with both hands, clinked it gently with Jiang Ning's and nodded with a smile.

He would take up this responsibility and do his best!

"By the way, Mr Jiang. Now that Lin Group has stabilized itself in Shengcheng, I believe it's headed for the entire southeast region, right?"

Jiang Ning nodded.

"Unlike those people in the north who just oversee the area from afar, the powerful families in the eight major cities of the southeast area have very deep roots in their territories, like old tree roots. It's not easy to get into their territory."

It wasn't just difficult to get in. They would also have to prevent them from taking over Lin Group!

Who wouldn't want a young sapling that was going to eventually become a huge tree?

Those people in the legal circles had a lot of methods to deal with competition. They were not easy to deal with at all.

Jiang Ning put his tea cup down. He narrowed his eyes and motioned for Butler Zhao to continue.

"Lin Group has expanded rapidly recently and it has already attracted the attention of those powerful families in the southeast."

Butler Zhao poured a cup of tea on the table, dipped his finger into the tea and drew a few circles.

That was representative of the southeast region. Butler Zhao's finger drew a tick in one of the circles and tapped it twice.

"The Yang family of Jianzhou has already started making plans in secret. Their plans are all aimed at competing with Lin Group!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

They probably weren't just competing.

Jiang Ning could see where they were going with this.

Lin Group had been expanding very quickly. Anyone with a little bit of foresight would be able to see that Lin Group would eventually become a very powerful figure.

As competitors, they either had to kill Lin Group off while it was still an infant, otherwise they would have to seize this opportunity to find a way to control Lin Group now. Gaining control by either being a major shareholder or buying the company out was what those powerful families were best at doing.

Clearly, Lin Group had already been targeted.

"The Yang family?" Jiang Ning raised an eyebrow. "Never heard of them."

These families that only controlled their own territory were families that Jiang Ning would never have heard of. Besides, they weren't worth hearing about.

Butler Zhao nodded and didn't say anymore. He had already prepared all the information on the Yang family.

He knew that these people were just a little troublesome to Jiang Ning but not a threat at all. He was just letting Jiang Ning know.

"Zhao, the information network has to go beyond the south, and has to even go beyond this country, you understand what I'm saying?" Jiang Ning said while looking at Butler Zhao.

He wanted a much bigger area than this!

He needed Butler Zhao to continue expanding so that their information network could reach greater areas.

"Got it," Butler Zhao nodded. He knew Jiang Ning's ambition. "So I'll need more people, especially some who know Shengcheng well."

"Essentially, I'd like to ask you for a few people."

Jiang Ning laughed. "Zhang Cheng, right? He's at one of the vegetable markets in Donghai and he's settled in well. If you need someone, just look for him directly."

"Sure, I know what to do."

"The tea here is really not bad. I'll come by another day."

Jiang Ning got up and left the club.

He wasn't bothered by what Butler Zhao had said. If someone wanted to create trouble for Lin Group, he wasn't concerned as long as it wasn't big trouble. In fact, he could even use this chance to train Lin Yuzhen.

If they were big trouble...well, what sort of big trouble could one Yang family create that Jiang Ning couldn't handle?

Lin Group was definitely going to expand. Lin Yuzhen was going to be a woman who stood right at the top of the business world.

She was going to become even more outstanding than that girl.

That was Jiang Ning's aim.

Meanwhile, Lin Yuzhen was arranging her work.

After Lin Group stabilized itself in Shengcheng, there were so many other industry players coming over to Shengcheng to take a look, and some of them were even from huge companies in other major cities.

This chance to learn from one another was hard to come by.

"CEO Lin, so many representatives have come by recently. Looks like they're paying very close attention to Lin Group's development," said Xiaozhao. "Some of them have also suggested that we organize a networking event so that everyone in the industry can get together and exchange ideas."

Lin Yuzhen nodded. She had thought of this too.

"We definitely need such an event. Firstly, it would help to help the various representatives build a good relationship with one another, and secondly, increased interaction would help to improve this industry."

After thinking for a while, she continued, "But we don't have a lot of people on hand in Shengcheng to help get this organized."

They weren't in Donghai. Lin Group only had a small group in Shengcheng, so it wasn't really possible to get more people to suddenly come over from Donghai.

"Ask Brother Ning," Xiaozhao blurted out. "Brother Ning has so many friends in Shengcheng..."

Lin Yuzhen glared at her. "How did you know?"

"Brother Ning told me when he snatched my tidbits away that if I run into any

trouble in Shengcheng, I can look for him.”

She was a little gleeful when she said that.

Being watched over was such a nice feeling.

Just as they were speaking, Jiang Ning walked in with two ice creams in hand while he was eating one himself.

“Buy two get one free! Xiaozhao, you’re so lucky. Otherwise I wouldn’t have bought any for you,” said Jiang Ning with a laugh.

“Thank you Brother Ning!”

Xiaozhao didn’t bother being polite around him at all. She grabbed one, ripped off the wrapper and stuffed it into her mouth. “CEO Lin has something to tell you, Brother Ning! I’ll get going!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning carefully unwrapped the ice cream and passed it to Lin Yuzhen. There was still cold air coming out of his own mouth.

"What is it?"

Lin Yuzhen looked at Jiang Ning. The weather wasn't hot yet, so why was he eating ice cream already?

She took the ice cream from him and looked at it. She finally gave in and took a bite. It was delicious.

"I'm thinking of organizing a networking event but I don't have many people in Shengcheng. Do you have any of your Beggars' Sect friends here?"

Nowadays Lin Yuzhen asked this way, because Jiang Ning was the one who said that he had friends from his Beggars' Sect everywhere.

"Yup I do," Jiang Ning nodded. "It's just a networking event, I'll get it arranged for you."

"Thank you, hubbyyy..." said Lin Yuzhen. "It's so nice to have you around."

"I heard there are a lot of representatives here to take a look?"

The two of them sat on the table and chatted as they ate their ice creams.

"More than ten representatives came, and some of them are even from other regions," Lin Yuzhen licked her lips. "I was surprised."

She had no idea how alluring she looked when she licked her lips.

"That just means that the influence Lin Group has is greater than before. It's only a matter of time before Lin Group attracts attention, so you have to be prepared. Competition among corporations is just like fighting a military war."

Jiang Ning then suddenly stared at Lin Yuzhen's lips and stretched a hand out. "Don't move!"

"What's wrong?"

Lin Yuzhen instantly froze as if she was stuck.

"There's something on your mouth."

Jiang Ning leaned over and gently kissed her without holding back. "Ok, it's gone."

It tasted so sweet!

He wasn't sure if it was the ice cream that was sweet or if Lin Yuzhen's lips tasted sweet.

Lin Yuzhen, on the other hand, went numb instantly as if she had been electrocuted.

She felt like her face had suddenly become very hot!

She turned to look at Jiang Ning to find that he still had a calm expression on his face and was still eating his ice cream very seriously. It was as if he had really just helped to wipe away something on her mouth earlier.

Was he so casual about taking advantage of her?

But she couldn't possibly ask him up front whether he purposely kissed her or not.

The atmosphere in the office suddenly became a little amorous. Lin Yuzhen quietly ate her ice cream without saying anything. She was eating so carefully as if she was afraid that if she got any on her mouth again, Jiang Ning was going to help her clean it up.

Meanwhile, Jiang Ning was just wondering why it tasted so sweet.

Jiang Ning said that he wanted to organize a networking event, so all the bosses in Shengcheng's illegal circle immediately responded to the call and said they would get it organized, and hoped that Jiang Ning would give them this chance.

Of course, Jiang Ning gladly let them have it.

There were plenty of people on it. Jiang Ning wasn't interested in handling such petty matters himself.

In no time, the time and venue for the party was fixed and the invitations were printed according to Lin Yuzhen's requirements.

Everyone who received an invitation were all people of high standing in Shengcheng. Some representatives from other cities were also invited. Nobody without an invitation was allowed into the event.

Since this was a party that Jiang Ning asked for, all the bosses in the illegal circle put in great efforts into arranging things and would not allow for any mistakes.



At a five star hotel.

Yang Luolin nodded in satisfaction when he saw the invitation that was just sent to him.

The other representatives had mentioned having a networking event because he had told them to say that.

As the heir to the Yang family, Yang Luolin was the most outstanding one in the younger generation of the family.

His intelligence, his schemes, his ambition and his methods were all way above his peers.

And of course, he was good looking too. In this era where good looks are everything, there were few women who could resist his charm.

His aim this time was very clear.

"This Lin Group, is mine. And this woman, Lin Yuzhen – I want her too!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Group's rapid expansion naturally attracted a lot of attention. And since they were now in the same industry, Yang Luolin had their eye on them.

And when he discovered that Lin Yuzhen was an innocent looking beauty, he was even more interested.

"Young Master Yang, Lin Group must have risen so quickly because there's someone helping them from behind," warned the man next to him.

"Which person has been able to rise without some help along the way?" Yang Luolin could see this very clearly. "But it's just some help along the way to carry you through a small part, and such help wouldn't be too involved."

"Especially those big shots."

Yang Luolin knew this sort of thing very well because he had always heard about such things from a very young age.

Those big shots were already successful in the first place, so giving some help or some gentle reminders to someone who had just started was just something they did out of convenience.

And even if this help came from someone close to Lin Group, it was probably just someone who was successful in tiny Donghai.

"I heard that the tremendous change in Donghai is also thanks to Lin Group, so it's better to be careful," his subordinate reminded him again.

Yang Luolin turned to look at Fan Ruo, a subordinate who had followed him for several years, and frowned, "Do I need you to remind me?"

"I'm sorry, Young Master Yang."

"Just do your own work well."

"Yes, Young Master Yang."

Fan Ruo clasped his hands together and didn't dare to say anymore.

He knew Yang Luolin's temperament and personality well, so a couple of reminders was sufficient. Yang Luolin would get angry if he said anymore.

It wasn't the first time Yang Luolin was pulling such a stunt and he had never failed before. But this time he was moving into Tianhai and targeted Lin Group.

After pulling a few tricks on Lin Group, he had discovered that this company was no simple one. But further investigation didn't yield much result.

Apparently several powers from the north had gone to Shengcheng, but everyone returned empty handed.

Apparently they had all reached an agreement and decided against going into Shengcheng, and that was how Lin Group got the chance to stabilize its operations in Shengcheng.

But Fan Ruo's intuition told him that things were not so simple.

So even though he didn't know the truth behind the whole thing, there was nothing wrong with being careful. Unfortunately, proud and arrogant people like Yang Luolin refused to listen to any of this.

"Alright now, you don't have to attend the party tonight. Hurry up and complete the things you're working on."

Yang Luolin got up, removed his clothes and walked to the bathroom. "I give you one month. After that, you'd better make sure that nobody in Shengcheng is willing to work with Lin Group anymore."

"Got it!"

Fan Ruo nodded and left the room.

Yang Luolin took a bath, sprayed some cologne on himself and dressed himself up well.

He looked at his nearly perfect body in the mirror and smiled.

"Lin Yuzhen, you can't escape from the palm of my hand!"

He was definitely going to take Lin Group down, and he was definitely not letting Lin Yuzhen off. She was very different from other women, and he had never tasted one like her.

After getting changed, Yang Luolin's driver sent him to the party.

Meanwhile,

Lin Yuzhen was all ready too.

Her evening gown accentuated her curvaceous figure.

"Very pretty." Jiang Ning looked at her several times and finally nodded. "Normally I see you in pajamas, so I never realized."

"Tsk."

Lin Yuzhen scoffed, but there was a sweetness in her heart. This irritating fellow finally complimented her figure.

"Let's go, I'll send you there," Jiang Ning smiled.

The bosses of Shengcheng's illegal circle had arranged everything for the party, so Jiang Ning didn't have to worry at all.

He drove Lin Yuzhen to the hotel. As the host, she had to reach earlier than the guests.

"You can go in first, I'll park the car."

Xiaozhao was already at the entrance. When she saw Jiang Ning's car, she went to open the door and helped Lin Yuzhen out of the car. She was already so stunned by Lin Yuzhen's breathtaking beauty.

Jiang Ning turned the car into the carpark to find that it was nearly full. He finally spotted a lot after some time.

Just when he was about to park, a very loud honking could suddenly be heard from around the corner.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

S680A Maybach S680 drove over and was very aggressive. The driver had clearly seen the same empty lot and wasn't polite about it at all. He honked loudly to shock Jiang Ning so that he could take that empty lot.

Most people wouldn't dare to take the lot if they saw that a luxury car was fighting with them for the lot. If they accidentally scratched the luxury car, they couldn't afford to pay for the damages.

The other driver clearly knew this very well, so he went ahead to honk unreasonably and stepped on the accelerator.

But Jiang Ning didn't seem to have seen the other driver coming. He also stepped hard on the accelerator and turned the steering wheel hard, spinning the back of the car right in front of the lot.

He shifted to reverse gear, stepped on the accelerator, then braked.

It was over in a second!

That Maybach nearly hit Jiang Ning's car when it stopped, but he clearly couldn't get the lot anymore.

Jiang Ning didn't seem to have seen any of this. He turned off the engine, locked the door and left.

"I saw this parking lot first, drive your car away!" The driver stuck his head out from the Maybach and looked nasty as he said, "Right now!"

Jiang Ning glanced at him. "Fucking idiot."

"What did you say?!"

The driver's face fell. He got out of the car and blocked Jiang Ning's way.

Nobody had ever dared to snatch a lot away from him like this. Anyone who saw this limited edition Maybach would obediently make way. But Jiang Ning actually cursed at him!

Even though he was only a driver, he was an important person's driver!

"I said, you're a fucking idiot." Jiang Ning looked at the driver. "Heard me clearly now? How strange, I've never met anyone who wanted me to curse at him."

After that, he ignored the driver.

"Stop right there!" The driver became angry. He grabbed Jiang Ning's arm and said fiercely, "How dare you curse at me, you...AHH!"

Before he could finish his sentence, Jiang Ning slapped him on the face so hard that he took a few steps backwards and there were five bright red finger marks on his face.

"I even dare to hit you!" Jiang Ning's face was filled with disdain. "You don't know your place anymore just because you drive this stupid car and now you want try snatching a parking lot? Who cares about you? Find another lot yourself! If you continue spouting nonsense, I'll smash your car!"

He cast the driver a glance that was so cold, the driver dared not say anything. He could only cover his face and watch Jiang Ning walk away.

He was just a driver but he was so used to bullying others because of his employer. But Jiang Ning's look earlier made him shudder.

"Damn it! This damned bastard!" He clenched his teeth and just left his car parked in front of Jiang Ning's car so that it blocked his way. "Just a stupid BMW! Bang into my car if you dare! I dare you!"

If Jiang Ning dared to knock into this car that was worth more than \$10 million, Jiang Ning would go bankrupt for sure!

Besides, Jiang Ning couldn't afford to offend the owner of this car!

After parking the car there, the driver glared at the BMW, then he laughed coldly to himself and quickly walked towards the hotel.

He quickly ran to the entrance to see that Jiang Ning was also there and he was shocked. This fellow was here for the networking event too?

He drove a lowly BMW and he was eligible to come for this networking event too?

"So slow." Yang Luolin was chatting with someone else at the door as he looked unhappily at his driver. "Where's my invitation?"

The driver passed him the invitation and smiled sheepishly, "Sorry Young Master Yang, something cropped up earlier."

Yang Luolin took the invitation from him and noticed the fresh palm imprint on his driver's face. His face immediately fell.

His driver had been slapped?

Someone dared to hit one of his men?

Even though he was a mere dog to the Yang family, whoever hit this dog had to consider its owner too.

"You useless thing," Yang Luolin scoffed coldly in a quiet voice. "Embarrassing me like this."

The driver dared not argue back. He just hung his head while he felt depressed and helpless.

He had been slapped earlier and now he had been scolded by Young Master Yang, and he was beginning to get angry.

"Who hit you?"

He was waiting for Yang Luolin to ask this question.

The driver immediately looked up at Jiang Ning, who was walking towards the entrance. He clenched his teeth and said, "It's that guy! He nearly knocked into your car and he even hit me!"

Yang Luolin turned and frowned as he saw Jiang Ning walk towards them.

Jiang Ning was dressed very ordinarily and wasn't really handsome either. In fact he looked like the same kind of person as his driver. This sort of person dared to hit someone under the care of the Yang family?

"Young Master Yang!"

Just as he was thinking about this, a man with a pot belly came walking over. The moment he saw Yang Luolin, he started walking over quickly and stretched a hand out to shake Yang Luolin's.

"Young Master Yang! Why are you still standing at the entrance! I heard you were standing here, so I quickly came out to fetch you!"

Fei Hou was a boss in Shengcheng. He was considered a senior in this industry.

Lin Yuzhen said she was going to revolutionize the market and expand it after entering Shengcheng. He never believed it. After all, the most important thing to businessmen was profit, wasn't it? If there was no profit to be made, who would bother doing business?

He wanted to use this networking event to get closer to other players in the same industry from outside Shengcheng, and one person he wanted to get closer to was Yang Luolin.

"Mr Fei, you're too polite. I left the invitation card in the car and I was waiting for my driver to bring it to me," Yang Luolin smiled. "This networking event is a very exclusive party and I can't possibly go in without an invitation."

"Nonsense! That might be the case for other people, but Young Master Yang is the star today, so you can go in even without an invitation." Fei Hou stretched a hand out and smiled, "Young Master Yang, this way please. CEO Lin is already here."

When he heard that Lin Yuzhen had reached, a greedy glint flashed for just a brief moment in Yang Luolin's eyes.

He was about to walk in when he saw that Jiang Ning had reached the entrance and was going to walk in too. Yang Luolin immediately frowned.

"Mr Fei, is this also someone who doesn't need an invitation?"

Fei Hou immediately turned around to look. When he saw Jiang Ning about to step in, he quickly called him to stop.

"Wait up!"

He had never seen Jiang Ning before and didn't have any right to anyway. If he knew who Jiang Ning was, he wouldn't have dared to block Jiang Ning's way even if there were a hundred of him.

But now that Yang Luolin had pointed him out, Fei Hou had to make sure that Yang Luolin was attended to.

When Jiang Ning heard someone call out after him, he turned around and asked, "What is it?"

"Which company are you from? Where's your invitation? Don't you know that you can't walk into this party without an invitation card?"

Fei Hou lifted his head slightly as he sneered at Jiang Ning as if he was all high and mighty. "If you have an invitation, then go register yourself. Do you have an invitation?"

"Nope," replied Jiang Ning.

Yang Luolin felt like laughing. He guessed that this guy was probably someone's driver. His employer wasn't here to bring him in and he wanted to go



in?

Yang Luolin's driver was standing behind his employer and had a smug expression on his face as he coldly looked at Jiang Ning, happy that Jiang Ning was getting taught a lesson.

"You don't have an invitation and you still want to go in?" Fei Hou immediately started speaking in an impatient manner. "Go away, go away! This is not a place you can walk into!"

He then didn't bother himself with Jiang Ning anymore. He couldn't believe someone like Jiang Ning thought he had the right to join this party.

He turned to look at Yang Luolin, "Young Master Yang, let's go in."

"And my driver?" Yang Luolin purposely asked.

He said this while looking at Jiang Ning.

He was trying to imply that even someone like his driver could go in, while Jiang Ning couldn't.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Of course he can go in. He has to wait on your instructions at all times, right?" replied Fei Hou with a laugh.

Yang Luolin nodded. He was pleased with Fei Hou's arrangement.

His driver now felt like he was in a higher position than before. He scoffed and purposely threw Jiang Ning a glance.

Jiang Ning immediately understood that Yang Luolin was this driver's employer, and they were trying to humiliate him.

"Wait a moment." Jiang Ning stuck a hand out and blocked the driver. "Do you have an invitation?"

"I don't, but I get to go in," replied the driver smugly.

"If you don't have an invitation, you can't go in." Jiang Ning pointed at Fei Hou, "That's what this gentleman said earlier."

Yang Luolin narrowed his eyes. This fellow didn't seem to know what was good for him. Did this guy need him to teach him a lesson?

"What nonsense are you talking about?" Fei Hou's expression immediately darkened. "When did I say Young Master Yang's driver can't go in?"

"I'm saying that YOU can't go in!" He scoffed coldly. "You think any stray dog or stray cat can enter and get free food and free drinks? I've seen plenty of people like you!"

Fei Hou then tried to bring Yang Luolin and his driver inside.

Jiang Ning continued to block their way.

"If you can only enter with an invitation, then he can't go in. If he gets to go in, then I get to go in too. Rules are rules, and they are not to be broken."

Fei Hou started laughing like he was looking at a fool.

He was definitely allowing Yang Luolin's driver in, otherwise it would be embarrassing to Yang Luolin. But he wasn't letting Jiang Ning in ever!

"Don't make trouble here, otherwise...don't blame me for turning nasty!"

PAK!

Jiang Ning slapped Fei Hou so hard that he spun around and there were five bright red finger marks on his face.

"And what do you mean by you're going to get nasty?"

Yang Luolin didn't expect Jiang Ning to actually hit someone.

His driver immediately shuddered as if he was the one who got slapped. His face started feeling a hot and stinging pain.

"You...you're asking for it!"

Fei Hou's embarrassment turned to fury. He clutched his cheek and looked like he was about to murder someone.

Someone had actually hit him!

This man had actually slapped him in front of Yang Luolin! He had never been so embarrassed before!

"You're the one asking for it." Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered with him and walked in. Fei Hou didn't dare to block him, so he started shouting, "Security! Security!"

A few men from the illegal circle came walking over. They were in charge of maintaining order and had been watching the place carefully because they were afraid of troublemakers.

"What is it?"

They looked at Fei Hou with very stern faces.

Their boss had told them that the king of Donghai was the one who organized this party and if anything went wrong, he would break their legs!

"There's a troublemaker!" Fei Hou clutched his cheek and said angrily, "He doesn't have an invitation but he insisted on going in. Get him out of there and beat him to death!"

"Someone barged in?"

Their expressions darkened and became furious. Someone actually dared to make trouble? Did he not know who organized this event?

It was organized by the king of Donghai!

"Bring us in to look for him!"

Their expressions were very grim now.

Fei Hou nodded and turned to look at Yang Luolin, "Young Master Yang, let's go in. I hope this matter hasn't affected your mood. I'll make sure that fellow pays for what he did!"

Yang Luolin wasn't bothered. A small fry wasn't worthy to ruin his mood.

He walked in with his driver, while Fei Hou brought the men from the illegal circle to look for Jiang Ning while cursing away.

"It's that bastard in front! Break his legs and throw him out!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Fei Hou started yelling when he spotted Jiang Ning.

He was going to make Jiang Ning pay for slapping him!

If he didn't get to slap Jiang Ning at least ten times, his anger wasn't going to be appeased.

Since when could just anyone slap him like that?

"You over there! Stop right there!" Fei Hou ran over and grabbed Jiang Ning with a cold laugh. "Trying to leave after hitting me? If I don't break your legs today, you'll never hear the end of me!"

Jiang Ning turned and his expression darkened.

Nobody had ever dared to speak to him this way before.

"Let go."

His voice was a little cold. But those eyes were like ancient ice caves, and made one feel like you were falling into an abyss.

Fei Hou's heart trembled violently.

He didn't even know why he was suddenly so afraid.

"You...you are still trying to act high and mighty?" Fei Hou let go of him and took two steps back. He turned around and shouted, "It's him! He's the one who dared to make trouble here and doesn't seem to know who's the one organizing this party!"

"Hold onto him, I want to slap him a few times myself!" Fei Hou clenched his fists tightly as though he was gathering his strength. "After I'm done slapping, you guys break his legs and throw him out!"

The men who came in with Fei Hou felt like they couldn't breathe anymore when they saw Jiang Ning's face.

They felt like they were going to suffocate.

It was the king!

The king of Donghai!

The king that made their bosses fall down and worship just by hearing his name!

The king who shocked the illegal circles of Tianhai and frightened off all the powers from the north singlehandedly!

The king who killed the highly skilled martial artist, Ye Xinhuo, with one punch!

They had never seen Jiang Ning in person because they weren't eligible to, but they remembered the photos of Jiang Ning and all the people important to him better than they remembered what their own parents looked like.

Because these were people that they definitely could not offend, could not displease and could not be the slightest bit disrespectful towards!

And now, Fei Hou wanted them to hold Jiang Ning down so that Fei Hou could slap Jiang Ning.

Fei Hou still wanted them to break Jiang Ning's legs and throw him out.

All of them gulped and felt that their legs were trembling. They nearly peed in their pants.

"Break my legs?" Jiang Ning glanced at all of them and narrowed his eyes. "Nobody has ever said anything like that to me before."

All the men who followed Fei Hou in felt like their brains had exploded and there was nothing left inside.

"You're too arrogant!" yelled Fei Hou angrily. "What are all of you standing there for? Hold him down and break his legs!"

None of them dared to move.

It was as if they had been nailed to the ground and even their soul couldn't move.

"Break them then," said Jiang Ning suddenly.

Fei Hou froze for a while. Jiang Ning actually agreed?

He had actually agreed to let someone else break his legs?

Fei Hou was glad that this man knew how to behave. If he put up a fight, then the consequences would be even more severe!

"Humph, glad you know how to behave. Then break...AHHH!"

Before Fei Hou could finish his sentence, someone kicked him hard from behind and he landed on the floor.

"Hold him down!" The leader of the men behind spoke both coldly and furiously.

They had nearly offended that king! Nearly!

Even without Jiang Ning or his wolves doing anything, their own boss would have skinned them alive for doing such a thing!

"What...what are you doing...OWWW!"

The leader didn't wait for Fei Hou to snap out of his confusion. He slapped Fei Hou across the face more than ten times in fury.

"Hit HIM! HIM! AHH! Why...why are you hitting me?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I'm going to hit YOU!" the leader shouted angrily. "Hold onto him!"

The rest of them were equally terrified after thinking about what could have happened if they offended Jiang Ning. They hated Fei Hou to the core for nearly causing their deaths. They held onto Fei Hou tightly so that their leader could slap him repeatedly to the point where Fei Hou's mouth was covered with blood.

CRAACK!

Suddenly the sound of bones cracking could be heard. Fei Hou's face instantly turned red, then paled as he grabbed his legs and started convulsing.

He still couldn't understand why these men were attacking him.

Were these men blind?

Jiang Ning was the one they were supposed to hit!

"This sort of person has no right to attend the networking event. Throw him out," said Jiang Ning calmly.

"Got it!"

They dragged Fei Hou out.

Fei Hou suddenly realized one thing. They...they listened to Jiang Ning?

But why?

They seemed very afraid of Jiang Ning. In fact, they looked terrified!

Why did things turn out like that? What was going on?

"Let me go...what are you trying to do...you...AHHH!"

Jiang Ning didn't bother about him anymore. Now it was clear who was the stray dog and cat coming in.

He walked in towards the main hall.

The hall was brightly lit and there was a violinist elegantly playing soothing music so that everyone could relax.

There were many people milling around with a glass of red wine in hand as they chatted with old friends and exchanged pointers with potential partners. It was a very lively scene indeed.



"CEO Lin is here!"

Lin Yuzhen came out in her evening gown and took everyone's breath away. All the other women in the hall didn't want to stand too close to her.

Many men's eyes never left her throughout the event.

She held a glass of red wine in her hands as she went around to say hello to all the guests and looked confident and elegant.

"Where on earth is Jiang Ning? Why isn't he here yet?" Lin Yuzhen thought to herself. It didn't take that long to park the car, did it?

From afar, Yang Luolin entered the hall and his eyes lit up the moment he saw how dazzling Lin Yuzhen shone.

She was like a bright star in the night, and it was hard for him to miss.

"She's too beautiful," Yang Luolin murmured. "This sort of woman is worthy to be my partner."

He waved a hand and a waiter came round with a glass of red wine.

Just as Yang Luolin was about to say hello to Lin Yuzhen, his driver suddenly said, "How did he get in?"

Jiang Ning was at the buffet area and placing various snacks onto his plate. He seemed to have found something he liked and the plate was almost full.

Yang Luolin turned and frowned.

He didn't like Jiang Ning. He couldn't believe someone who had upset one of his actually managed to come in.

"Looks like Fei Hou is completely useless. He couldn't get him even with all those other men with him." Yang Luolin glanced at Jiang Ning with disdain. "He's really here to help himself to help himself to free food after all."

"Young Master Yang.."

The driver could barely hold it in. He wanted to expose Jiang Ning on the spot and embarrass him in front of everyone.

"No need," Yang Luolin shook his head. "He's just a small fry, and not worth my attention."

He had to look well mannered and magnanimous. So how could he be petty

about an ant like that?

"Yes boss." The driver didn't dare to say anymore. He found an inconspicuous corner to sit down, but he continued to stare at Jiang Ning while he thought about what he could do to take revenge.

"Where is that fellow?"

Lin Yuzhen looked around and suddenly noticed that Jiang Ning was leaning against the buffet tables and trying all sorts of little snacks and desserts. She nearly burst out laughing.

This greedy boy! Su Mei had groomed Jiang Ning into such a glutton.

She was about to walk over when someone held out a glass of red wine at her.

"CEO Lin, you're really beautiful today."

Yang Luolin was dressed in an exquisitely designed suit and stood tall and straight. His handsome face had attracted a lot of women's attention from the moment he walked in.

He looked extremely elegant, gentlemanly and full of charm. "Could I give CEO Lin a toast?"

Who would refuse such an outstanding young man?

Many women were already clenching their fists and couldn't even hide the jealousy on their faces!

"Excuse me," Lin Yuzhen smiled apologetically and walked towards Jiang Ning without taking the glass of red wine.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The music in the event hall seemed to have stopped at that moment in time. Yang Luolin could barely believe it.

He had been rejected?

He had taken the initiative to talk to her but Lin Yuzhen had rejected him? In fact, she had rejected him in front of so many people. She didn't even want to clink glasses with him or drink a sip of wine?

Many people were watching him and they seemed to have seen everything that just happened. Yang Luolin suddenly felt like his face was stinging.

It was as if he had been slapped in the face!

But he soon snapped out of his shock. He kept a faint smile on as he watched Lin Yuzhen walk towards Jiang Ning.

He looked calm and composed, as if nothing had happened. He continued to look at gentlemanly as ever.

But he found it difficult to hide the anger in his eyes.

He pretended to be nonchalant about it and passed the wine to another lady. The lady immediately became excited and thought she was dreaming.

"How could a beautiful lady have no wine in her hand?" Yang Luolin tried to cover up his embarrassment by giving her the glass of wine in his hand. He gently clinked glasses with her and walked away from her.

The other lady felt like she was in a dream and she nearly squealed in delight.

Yang Luolin had taken the initiative to clink glasses with her!

She was going to tell all her girlfriends.

Yang Luolin walked to one side as if he wasn't bothered by anything, but he kept an eye on Lin Yuzhen.

Lin Yuzhen walked over to Jiang Ning and scoffed. "Why are you hiding here?"

"I'm eating," Jiang Ning looked up at Lin Yuzhen. "I'm hungry!"

Lin Yuzhen didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

This was the sort of event for everyone to drink, chat and make a few friends. Nobody would care about the food. Jiang Ning was the only exception.

But then again, Jiang Ning wouldn't be interested in making friends with any of these people.

If Jiang Ning didn't have to protect Lin Yuzhen, he wouldn't even have bothered to come.

"Then you stay around here and don't walk too far off, don't go out of my sight," Lin Yuzhen said with a slightly reddened face.

She was always a little anxious if she couldn't see Jiang Ning.

Lin Yuzhen seldom came for such events in the past and didn't have much experience. Lin Group now wanted to expand and she was leading that movement, so she knew that she would have to appear at even more of such events in the future.

But as long as Jiang Ning was by her side, she wasn't afraid.

"Sure," Jiang Ning nodded. He purposely looked like he had just received an order and responded with great respect, "Yes, CEO Lin."

Lin Yuzhen nearly burst out laughing when she saw how Jiang Ning was pretending to be all serious. She managed to hold it in and whispered, "That glutinous rice ball thing is really delicious, I stole a bite earlier!"

She then turned back to talk to other guests.

Lin Yuzhen's back was facing Yang Luolin, so he didn't see the cheeky look on Lin Yuzhen's face. All he saw was how Jiang Ning had nodded so seriously and he immediately figured out who Jiang Ning was.

"Oh, so he's Lin Yuzhen's driver. No wonder he dared to hit one of mine."

He thought Jiang Ning might be some big shot, but once he saw Lin Yuzhen go over to give him instructions and Jiang Ning responded so politely, he concluded that Jiang Ning was definitely Lin Yuzhen's driver.

But what was a mere driver compared to himself?

Lin Yuzhen probably had something urgent to tell her driver, and that's why she rejected his offer of red wine. Otherwise there was no way she would have embarrassed him like that earlier.

When Yang Luolin thought about it that way, he felt better about what happened earlier.

"Since you're Lin Yuzhen's driver, I'll spare you."

He stared at Jiang Ning. He had wanted to teach Jiang Ning a good lesson, but decided to let him off on account of Lin Yuzhen.

After all, since he wanted to have Lin Yuzhen, he might actually need the help of this driver.

Yang Luolin narrowed his eyes as he swirled the red wine in his glass and walked towards Jiang Ning.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Hello friend, would you like to have a drink?" Yang Luolin asked with a smile. He had a warm and friendly look on his face.

Jiang Ning glanced at him. "I have to drive, so I can't drink."

He was really a driver!

Yang Luolin was even more certain of this.

"That's also true. CEO Lin's safety is more important," said Yang Luolin. "Earlier my driver had a misunderstanding about you, I'd like to apologize on his behalf, don't take it to heart."

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes. This fellow was here to apologize to him?

He looked hard at Yang Luolin with eyes that seemed to be able to see through everything, and he could tell what Yang Luolin was really thinking about.

Yang Luolin thought he could hide his true intentions from Jiang Ning?

"This is my name card, you can just call me if you need anything."

Yang Luolin took a name card out and held it out at Jiang Ning with one hand. He wasn't polite to Jiang Ning at all.

Jiang Ning had a cheeky smile when he saw the name printed on the card.

"The Young Master of the Yang family in Jianzhou?"

He looked at Yang Luolin with a strange smile.

He hadn't expected to run into a Yang like this.

Butler Zhao's information was indeed reliable. This Yang family had their eye on Lin Group, and this Yang Luolin looked like he had his eye on Lin Yuzhen.

And now Yang Luolin was trying to get close to Lin Yuzhen through Jiang Ning.

"Pleased to meet you," Jiang Ning stretched his hand out and replied courteously, "I didn't know you were Young Master Yang, sorry for being rude."

Yang Luolin was very pleased with Jiang Ning's reaction.

That was exactly the effect he wanted.

In an instant, Yang Luolin returned to his high and mighty arrogant self. The fact that he had come over to speak to a driver like Jiang Ning should be Jiang

Ning's greatest honor.

He lightly shook Jiang Ning hand and took his hand back. He calmly said, "Since you're CEO Lin's driver, then you should be considered a trusted person of CEO Lin."

Jiang Ning nodded.

"Young Master Yang is so goodlooking, I suppose you're interested in CEO Lin?" Jiang Ning asked directly.

Yang Luolin narrowed his eyes and thought to himself that this driver had a really sharp eye.

He didn't admit it and just laughed. He didn't deny it either.

"CEO Lin is a very outstanding lady and has very high standards. She wouldn't care for an ordinary man," Jiang Ning sighed. "Even someone like Young Master Yang might not even meet her minimum standard."

Yang Luolin frowned slightly. What did Jiang Ning mean by that?

He didn't even meet her minimum standard?

"Hoho, you need to have some skill to go after a girl!" Jiang Ning ignored the expression on Yang Luolin's face and continued, "Young Master Yang, if you want to learn, I could teach you."

Yang Luolin laughed coldly. "You want to teach me?"

Lin Yuzhen's driver would indeed know more things about Lin Yuzhen, but Yang Luolin didn't think he needed anyone to teach him how to woo a girl.

That was a joke!

"You don't believe me?"

Jiang Ning kept a strange smile on. Just as he finished saying this, the musicians started playing a dance number. Some guests paired up and started dancing on the dance floor.

"Young Master Yang, if you don't believe me, you can try asking CEO Lin to dance with you and see if she will agree," he said very casually. "If you succeed, I'll eat up all the cakes here."

Yang Luolin raised an eyebrow. He didn't want to stoop so low as to bet with Jiang Ning, but these words from Jiang Ning really agitated him.

Lin Yuzhen had refused his wine earlier. Would she refuse his invitation to a dance?

That wasn't possible!

Nobody would reject him! He was the eldest son of the Yang family, the heir to the Yang Group!

"And if you lose, then these cakes..." Jiang Ning held up a large platter filled with colorful cakes. "You'll have to eat them all!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



Jiang Ning looked at Yang Luolin, then just waved his hands about before Yang Luolin could respond. "Oh forget it, Young Master Yang is someone of high standing, so it'll be really embarrassing if you lose. Forget what I said."

Yang Luolin didn't want to bother himself with Jiang Ning, but once he heard these words, he started to smile coldly.

How could he lose?

There was no way he would lose a bet with a driver.

"Fine, let's bet on it then!" Yang Luolin snorted. "If you lose, then you shall have to eat this entire platter!"

The platter was filled with enough food to feed three to five people.

Jiang Ning nodded. "One must dare to lose if you dare to bet."

Yang Luolin eyed Jiang Ning, then his stomach. He scoffed coldly and put his wine glass down.

He then walked towards Lin Yuzhen.

"Young Master Yang, would you like to dance with me?"

As Yang Luolin made his way over to Lin Yuzhen, there were several women along the way who invited him to a dance with them, but he rejected them all.

He had never needed to prove how popular or how charming he was all these years.

Even women who were more outstanding and of higher standing than Lin Yuzhen had never rejected him, so Yang Luolin didn't think he would lose this bet.

"Just a mere driver wants to act all high and mighty in front of me?" Yang Luolin scoffed to himself. "I'm going to show you the difference between us!"

There were several others who were going to approach Lin Yuzhen for a dance as well, but they all made way for Yang Luolin when they saw him walk over.

They knew themselves well. They didn't stand a chance compared to Yang Luolin.

It was better to avoid embarrassment wherever possible.

"Yuzhen?"

Yang Luolin just called her by name this time.

His face was full of smiles, and his handsome face shone warmly and charmingly.

"Mr Yang," Lin Yuzhen nodded. She wasn't used to Yang Luolin calling her by name like that.

"Would you like to dance with me?"

Yang Luolin placed one hand behind him and held the other out to invite her.

He was gentlemanly and elegant.

Everyone started looking enviously at Lin Yuzhen.

Lin Group was expanding rapidly, but it was still small compared to what the Yang family of Jianzhou owned.

Yang Luolin had been friendly towards her more than once now. What did that mean?

That meant that he was interested in Lin Yuzhen!

Most other families would now be considering sending their daughter to Yang Luolin already.

After all, being able to climb up a large and sturdy tree was an excellent opportunity.

Everyone was waiting for Lin Yuzhen's decision.

But Lin Yuzhen turned to look at Jiang Ning who was still happily seated near the buffet table and enjoying his food.

"I'm sorry, but I don't know how to dance," Lin Yuzhen smiled apologetically. "I think Mr Yang should ask someone else."

Yang Luolin's expression fell a little as his heart sank. Did she just reject him?

"It's alright, I can teach you," he gently replied while keeping a smile on.

"No need, it's really alright, thanks."

Lin Yuzhen shook her head and continued to reject him.

She couldn't possibly agree. Her own husband was just over there, so how

could she dance with someone else?

Jiang Ning would get angry!

He would be jealous!

And no matter whether he was jealous or angry, Jiang Ning became terrifying.

The hand that Yang Luolin had stretched out instantly froze.

He had been rejected!

He had really been rejected!

Lin Yuzhen had rejected him again and again.

Yang Luolin could feel the stares from the people around him and he instantly became furious.

Nobody had ever dared to embarrass him like this before!

He nearly lost his temper but he managed to hold it in.

If he got angry and blew up now, then that would really destroy his image.

"In that case, I won't force CEO Lin then," Yang Luolin took his hand back, but his face felt this stinging pain from embarrassment.

Just as he was about to walk away, a voice called out from behind him.

"Wifey, I would like to dance with you."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

He spun around violently. It was Jiang Ning!

Who was he calling wifey?!

"Wait what? You want to dance?" Lin Yuzhen responded.

Yang Luolin felt like his brain just exploded.

Wifey?

Jiang Ning called Lin Yuzhen wifey and she really responded to that?

"Sure."

And she agreed?!

Yang Luolin felt a terrible ringing in his ears. What the hell was going on?

Jiang Ning smirked as he glanced at Yang Luolin. He was clearly challenging Yang Luolin.

He then walked over to Lin Yuzhen, took her hand and they walked to the dance floor. "You don't know how to dance? I'll teach you."

He placed a hand on Lin Yuzhen's waist and held Lin Yuzhen's hand in the other as he moved according to the beat and started dancing with Lin Yuzhen.

All eyes were on them immediately.

Nobody expected Lin Yuzhen to reject Yang Luolin and agree to dance with Jiang Ning instead.

"What did that guy call CEO Lin? Wifey?"

"I think so. If he called CEO Lin wifey, then...that's CEO Lin's husband?"

"Isn't he CEO Lin's driver?"

-----

There was a lot of murmuring around Yang Luolin. His face turned red from embarrassment, then white from anger, and eventually it started to look rather threatening.

He had even heard others pity him!

These people were saying that he wasn't even as good as a driver!

CRACK CRACK CRACK!

Yang Luolin clenched his fists tightly and all the veins on the back of his hands started popping.

Lin Yuzhen rejected him by saying that she didn't know how to dance. But she was dancing just fine with Jiang Ning.

It was just an excuse!

"CEO Lin!" Yang Luolin couldn't stand it anymore. He suddenly raised his voice, "What do you mean by this?"

"Are you purposely trying to insult me?"

The music suddenly stopped.

Lin Yuzhen was stunned. She didn't know what Yang Luolin meant at all.

How was she insulting Yang Luolin?

Why would she do such a thing?

"Hoho, you rejected my invitation, but danced with your driver and even let him call you wifey. CEO Lin, are you saying that I'm not even as good as your driver?"

Yang Luolin's expression was furious and extremely threatening.

He wanted to use this networking event to get closer to Lin Yuzhen so that he could make further advances.

He didn't like to take a woman by force. He preferred to convince a woman to take the initiative to obediently serve him.

But he had been insulted this time.

"Mr Yang, why do you say that?" Lin Yuzhen frowned a little and looked at Jiang Ning. "Jiang Ning is my driver, but he also really is my husband."

She didn't add on that Jiang Ning was her guardian angel.

"Nonsense!" Yang Luolin didn't believe her at all and laughed coldly. "Did you think I'm a fool?"

He was interested in Lin Yuzhen and many people could tell. But now Lin Yuzhen was saying her husband was her driver?

And this wasn't considered an insult to him?!

"You're really foolish."

Jiang Ning still had his hand around Lin Yuzhen's waist. He pulled her gently into his arms.

"I already told you that you don't even meet the minimum standards that my Yuzhen has. Why didn't you get the hint?"

He looked straight at Yang Luolin and continued calmly, "I said so earlier too – since we've made a bet, then the one must dare to lose if you dare to bet."

Yang Luolin turned and saw the platter filled with cakes.

He suddenly realized that Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen had purposely played him out!

"What are you even?" Yang Luolin snarled coldly. "You have no right to even talk to me!"

He wasn't going to admit defeat.

Jiang Ning smiled.

He walked over while looking straight at Yang Luolin like a predator staring at its prey.

"I don't know what I am, but I know what kind of person I am – I'm a man of my word!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What are you trying to do?" Yang Luolin's heart fell when he saw Jiang Ning walking towards him and he immediately shouted, "You dare to hit me?"

PAK!

Jiang Ning didn't hold back at all. He raised his hand and slapped Yang Luolin.

He slapped him hard!

The Yang family had been trying to take Lin Group down, so there was no need to be polite to him.

"Hit you?" Jiang Ning scoffed. "I just want you to go through with the bet. Don't tell me the almighty Young Master of the Yang family isn't a man of his word?"

Yang Luolin clutched his cheek and his entire face and ears were all red. He looked at the platter and started shouting, "So Lin Group doesn't want to remain in this industry anymore?"

"If you dare to touch me, I'll destroy Lin Group!"

Jiang Ning didn't seem to have heard what he said.

He had heard others threaten him this way so many times. If the Yang family could really destroy this company, then Jiang Ning would admit defeat.

He walked over and grabbed Yang Luolin's collar with one hand as if he was holding a cat up. "Young Master Yang, let's settle one thing at a time."

"If you want to destroy Lin Group, please go ahead. But now, it's time to settle our bet."

He then dragged Yang Luolin over and pressed him down against the floor. He used one hand to keep Yang Luolin's mouth open and used his other to pick up the little cakes from the platter and stuffed them into his mouth.

"UNGH! UNGH!"

"UNGH...NGHH! COUGH!"

Lin Yuzhen was stunned for a few moments, but then she remembered that Lin Wen told her the Yang family from Jianzhou were up to no good and she had to beware of them.

So she had always been wary of Yang Luolin.

When she saw how Jiang Ning made a move directly like that, she knew that

Jiang Ning knew even more about these Yangs than her.

She didn't stop him.

All the guests were shocked.

Jiang Ning was so domineering!

But everyone also realized that Yang Luolin had lost a bet to Jiang Ning, and that platter of cakes was what they bet on.

They would have been more than happy to watch the show if it was someone else, but this was Young Master Yang!

That was the future heir to the Yang family!

Jiang Ning was offending such a big shot!

"UNGGGHH!!!"

Yang Luolin tried to struggle free, but clearly he was no match for Jiang Ning and couldn't get out from his grip at all. He opened his mouth to say something, but all he got was another piece of cake.

"Let go of my Young Master!"

Yang Luolin's driver immediately dashed over and roared as he swung his fist towards Jiang Ning's head.

This was a great opportunity since Jiang Ning had started the fight. So even if the driver injured him, it wouldn't matter.

He might even get a compliment from the Yang family!

The driver clenched his fists tightly and used all the strength he had to punch towards Jiang Ning.

BAM!

But Jiang Ning just lifted a leg and kicked the driver's chest without even turning back. The driver immediately went flying out like a missile, knocking several tables over before landing on the floor while howling.

Jiang Ning didn't look in his direction at all and continued doing what he was originally doing.

And that was to make sure Yang Luolin ate everything off the platter!



Yang Luolin's face was all red now.

"Young Master Yang, the most important thing is to have credibility," said Jiang Ning calmly. "Since your family never taught you, I shall teach you."

Yang Luolin waved his arms about. He was going to choke to death.

He could only keep swallowing those cakes. His throat felt like it was stuffed to the brim and he couldn't get a word out.

After a while, Jiang Ning finally finished stuffing everything on the platter down his throat.

Jiang Ning let go of Yang Luolin, who was going purple in the face soon. Yang Luolin quickly grabbed a bottle of water and drank it down, then started coughing violently.

COUGH! COUGH COUGH!

Yang Luolin finally caught his breath after a long time. That feeling of being choked made him think he was going to die!

Jiang Ning had actually treated him like that!

"You...you..."

Yang Luolin didn't look elegant or charming anymore.

His suit was crumpled and his hair was messy. His face was twisted with anger and his stomach was bloated and nearly died eating all that cake!

"No need to thank me, this lesson is free of charge." Jiang Ning squatted down and patted Yang Luolin's face.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Do you know what happened to the last person who tried to be funny with my wife?"

"I don't think you want to know."

"You!!"

Yang Luolin clenched his teeth and glared at Jiang Ning. He wanted to say something nasty, but nothing came out when he saw how Jiang Ning was looking at him.

He felt like he was being stared at by a wild animal.

The terror he felt came from deep within his heart. It was a very basic sort of fear.

Jiang Ning then got up and took Lin Yuzhen's hand.

"Time to go home. The snacks here aren't nice to eat at all. They're awful compared to what Mum cooks."

After Jiang Ning took Lin Yuzhen away, Yang Luolin finally managed to stand up and looked a mess.

Everyone around him were pointing fingers at him and whispering among themselves, making Yang Luolin feel both frustrated and indignant.

He wanted to have this networking party so that he could display his charm and attract Lin Yuzhen's attention so that he could continue with his plans.

In the end?

Jiang Ning had suddenly appeared, slapped his face and deeply embarrassed him!

"Young Master Yang! Young Master Yang! Are you alright?"

His driver clutched his chest and ran over with an anxious look on his face.

PAK!

Yang Luolin was furious and slapped his driver hard across the face. "Are you hoping that I'm not alright? COUGH COUGH!"

After just a few words, Yang Luolin couldn't stop coughing and he felt a terrible pain in his stomach.

He couldn't take it after eating so much.

"Ah..."

Yang Luolin clutched his stomach and his face was pale as perspiration started pouring down. "Send me to the hospital to get my stomach pumped! Hurry up!"

In the carpark, Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen got into the car. Jiang Ning completely ignored the limited edition Maybach parked right in front of them. He changed gears, stepped hard on the accelerator and smashed the door of the Maybach right in.

Then he turned the car and drove out of the carpark like nothing even happened.

Lin Yuzhen sat in the passenger seat and wasn't a stranger to this scene.

Jiang Ning had knocked the Porsche out of the way the last time too.

Besides, she recognized this car as Yang Luolin's. That guy who dared to hit on her earlier.

The last one who dared to hit on her seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

Lin Yuzhen fiddled with her skirt and secretly glanced at Jiang Ning. "Hubby, don't be angry, ok? I didn't pay him any attention."

She had really tried to ignore Yang Luolin and was actually very wary of him throughout the event.

"Angry? Why would I be angry?" replied Jiang Ning calmly. "I'm only too happy that my wife is so attractive. I just don't like some of these flies that hang around you."

"I don't like them either," Lin Yuzhen pouted. "But I have to run into flies every now and then because of work, so what am I going to do?"

"If I don't work, then are you going to feed me?"

Jiang Ning turned and looked seriously at Lin Yuzhen.

Of course he could afford to feed Lin Yuzhen, but he couldn't do that. He was going to make sure his precious wife was going to become even more outstanding than she was now.

"Wifey."

"Hmm?"

"I married into your family, and I told you a long time ago that the doctor said my body is weak and I can't take care of myself and will have to rely on a woman to feed and clothe me, so you have to take charge of this."

Lin Yuzhen couldn't hold it in anymore and snorted loudly.

"OK! I'll work and feed you! Ok?!"

The BMW drove off at high speed.

Meanwhile, Yang Luolin's driver was helping him to the car.

When he saw that the car door was smashed in and it had been knocked out of the way, Yang Luolin's face was filled with fury.

"What's going on? What the hell is going on?!"

The driver's face turned pale and he trembled all over. He had purposely parked in front of Jiang Ning's car because he was sure that Jiang Ning wouldn't dare to drive his car into the Maybach, but little did he know...

Jiang Ning didn't care at all!

"It's that guy just now! I thought he wouldn't dare to knock into...AHH!"

Before the driver could finish speaking, Yang Luolin kicked him hard. But this kick made his stomach churn again, so he nearly fainted from the pain and collapsed onto the ground.

What a mess.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It was 10PM by the time they reached home.

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen took a shower, then got into bed to sleep.

It was as if nothing happened at the networking event earlier. Jiang Ning didn't mention it and Lin Yuzhen didn't say anything.

"Time to sleep."

Jiang Ning turned the lights off and was about to close his eyes.

Suddenly, Lin Yuzhen curled up and moved towards him.

"Hubby, I'm feeling a little cold."

Jiang Ning froze for a while. Why was it the other way round today?

"Ok, I'll hug you then."

Jiang Ning stretched his arm out and pulled it around Lin Yuzhen. The smell of her hair made him feel all relaxed.

There was something different about how she treated him.

"Hubby, you're really not angry?" Lin Yuzhen whispered.

She seemed to be worried that Jiang Ning was angry with her all the way home.

So was she curling herself into his arms to appease him?

"I'm not angry." Jiang Ning took in another breath of her hair and replied gently, "I'll never be angry with you."

"Thank you, hubby," Lin Yuzhen responded in a gentle voice.

After a few moments of silence, Lin Yuzhen shifted herself a little, because they seemed to be too close to each other.

She wasn't really used to it.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. Lin Yuzhen shifted herself and asked, "Does that Yang family have ill intentions?"

"Yup."

"I heard from Dad that they've always been very overbearing and are famous in

Jianzhou for being like this, so I've been wary of them," said Lin Yuzhen. "But then I also feel that as a business, we should be more understanding and help each other so that we can make the industry a better place. Am I wrong?"

"No, you're not wrong."

Of course Jiang Ning knew that Lin Yuzhen was a kind and innocent person deep inside. Everything that she did flowed out from this kindheartedness.

She was always thinking about others and always wanted to treat others as kindly as possible.

Su Mei and Lin Wen had protected her well since she was a child and didn't allow her to be polluted by selfish thoughts.

But not everyone in the world was a kind person.

"Yuzhen, you're a very kindhearted girl," Jiang Ning said quietly. "But not everyone is kind like you are."

"There are three colors in this world: black, white and gray. There are also three types of people: the good, the bad, and those who keep switching between good and bad."

Lin Yuzhen listened to him attentively.

She knew Jiang Ning was teaching her.

"Your kindness should be felt only by those who deserve to be treated kindly, you understand?"

Lin Yuzhen nodded.

Jiang Ning emphasized on this, "If you're too kind, others will think that you're weak and will bully you."

He suddenly felt like he was going through with a plan to create a perfect wife.

So far, everything was proceeding smoothly.

If he could keep Lin Yuzhen's kindhearted personality while making her even more outstanding and perfect, then that was already a beautiful thing to even just think about.

"Hubby, I understand what you're saying. Thank you."

Lin Yuzhen suddenly turned around and was now face to face with Jiang Ning.

Their noses were about to meet.

Jiang Ning stopped breathing.

He gulped.

Lin Yuzhen was sinning now!

No!

She was tempting him to sin!

Muacks.

"This is to thank you," Lin Yuzhen kissed Jiang Ning's lips gently and asked very, very softly, "I...didn't eat ice cream today, but is it sweet?"

Jiang Ning felt like his brain exploded. Damn it, he was going to lose control soon!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I don't think...I tasted anything," Jiang Ning gulped. "Why don't you try again?"

"No." Lin Yuzhen turned and her back faced Jiang Ning again. "Time to sleep, goodnight."

Jiang Ning wanted to cry.

Was she seriously leaving him hanging like that?

He started thinking about whether he wanted to ask for more, but then he heard the even sound of Lin Yuzhen's breathing.

Jiang Ning took a deep breath to help himself calm down. He felt that he had stiffened up.

So there was someone in this world who had control over this terrifying demon king after all.

Jiang Ning didn't dare to move since Lin Yuzhen was asleep. He didn't want to wake her up.

He didn't know that Lin Yuzhen had her eyes closed and a naughty smile on her lips as her back faced him.

Nothing else happened for the rest of the night.

At a hospital in Shengcheng.

Yang Luolin's face was deathly pale, as if he had gone through something really terrifying the night before. He was all weak now.

After Jiang Ning had force fed him with all those cakes on the platter, his stomach had nearly burst.

After getting his stomach all cleaned out and rested in the hospital, he finally felt a little better.

Yang Luolin was still lying on the hospital bed and everything looked like cake to him.

"That bastard! I want him dead!" he snarled angrily through clenched teeth.

He had been humiliated in front of so many people the night before at the networking event. He was so embarrassed.

He had intended to use his charm to win Lin Yuzhen over and take Lin Group down, but now he didn't have that kind of patience anymore.



"Young Master, they will reach Shengcheng by afternoon," reported his driver with a red and swollen face.

Yang Luolin had given orders for two of the highly skilled fighters from the Yang family to come over. These two were highly skilled martial artists that the Yang family had hired at a very high price after searching through the martial arts world.

"Tell them to hurry up!" Yang Luolin said coldly, "I can't wait any longer!"

He wasn't appeased if he didn't kill Jiang Ning.

And that Lin Yuzhen was just acting pure and innocent when she was really just a whore. Once he got his hands on her, he was going to make her life a living hell.

He got up and felt that his stomach was empty, but he was still uncomfortable with eating.

Yang Luolin clenched his teeth and said in a sinister voice, "We don't have to hide our intention to take Lin Group down anymore. I'm going to let Lin Group watch how they get destroyed but can't do anything about it!"

"Call all the business owners of fellow industry players in Shengcheng. Tell them that the Yangs are giving them a chance!"

"Yes, Young Master Yang!"

In no time.

At a meeting room in a five star hotel.

Yang Luolin had changed into an expensive suit, but he was still very pale.

He sat in the meeting room with an icy cold stare that looked like a poisonous snake. He didn't look elegant or classy anymore.

Everyone present were representatives from the same industry in Shengcheng. Some of them were suppliers and some of them were retailers. All of them were businesses that were closely tied to Lin Group.

"I won't beat around the bush." Yang Luolin scanned the room and said coldly, "I'll give you two choices."

"One, work with the Yang family and you'll have an opportunity to enter the southeast market. The Yangs will support you!"

"Two, keep working with the Lins and your goods and sales channels can forget about going outside of Shengcheng!"

Everyone's expression changed.

They had to choose one, but neither was a choice they wanted to make!

If they chose Lin Group, then they would have to remain in Shengcheng, so they wouldn't be able to expand further.

But if they chose the Yang family, then they would have betrayed Lin Group and let Lin Yuzhen down.

This wasn't giving them a choice at all. This was forcing them into a corner.

"This... Young Master Yang, what are you trying to say?"

"This is a little too overbearing, right? Every company wants to expand, but not like this."

"Exactly. Young Master Yang, you have to work with Lin Group too, so why..."

BAM!

Yang Luolin slammed the table hard and roared, "The Yang family will never work with Lin Group, and only one of us will be left standing! You think about it yourselves!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

This was an outright threat!

Yang Luolin didn't care about what others thought. He just stared coldly at them and didn't hold back at all.

"Choose between the Yang family and Lin Group. Once you're done choosing, you'll see the result."

How audacious!

"I said that I can make sure you have to stay within Shengcheng, and the Yang family is really powerful enough to do this!"

Nobody doubted the Yang family's ability to do this. The Yang family was the industry leader in the southeast region, so even though Lin Group was expanding quickly, they were still a long way off from the Yangs.

They didn't really need to think too hard about this.

If they chose the Yang family, they would only have betrayed the Lins and lose some in Shengcheng. But the Yang family could provide entry into the rest of the market.

But if they chose Lin Group, then that was almost as good as choosing bankruptcy!

The Yang family would definitely make sure they couldn't set foot outside of Shengcheng at all.

Many people started hesitating.

This was a matter of keeping their businesses alive, so they couldn't be swayed by any sort of attachment or tacit agreement.

"Young Master Yang, aren't you going too far by doing this?" Someone suddenly stood up among the crowd and looked angry.

"You want all of us to pick a side just because you have a personal feud with Lin Group? But I don't think any of us have offended you, right?"

Yang Luolin looked up at this man, but he didn't seem to have any impression of him.

"What are you even? You dare to question me?"

"I'm the chairman of Hui Group, Li Long!"

Li Long's face and ears were all red because he was furious.

His factory had been revived only because Lin Group had been willing to open the market and expand its model.

But the Yang family was now asking him to betray Lin Group.

How could he betray the company that saved his?

If he betrayed Lin Group, then how was he going to answer to all his grateful workers? They would think that Hui Group was a company that was ungrateful and even caused harm to the company that helped them so much.

"Hui Group?" Yang Luolin said with disdain. "I've never heard of it, and I think I won't need to hear about it ever again."

"You..."

Li Long was furious and pointed a finger at Yang Luolin, but he couldn't get a single word out.

"It's too late for you to choose the Yang family now, I won't count you in," Yang Luolin laughed coldly. "Get lost. Since you support the Lins, you can die with them."

Li Long was so angry that he was shaking all over, but there was nothing he could do.

Compared to the Yangs, he was just a tiny ant and the Yangs could squash him very easily.

He angrily clenched his fist, then left without saying a word.

"Who else?" Yang Luolin stood up and slammed the table. "Whoever still wants to support Lin Group can get out of here as well!"

Then he picked up his phone and made a call.

"Cut off all the retailers who work with Hui Group from Tianhai. I want them to go bankrupt and close down within one day!"

He purposely spoke very loudly so as to shock everyone in the meeting room.

Anyone who dared to go against him was going to end up bankrupt!

"I...I choose the Yangs."

"I choose the Yangs too."

"I hope Young Master Yang can help us."

-----

All these big bosses quickly nodded and made this choice with awkward smiles even if they weren't willing to.

They didn't have a choice!

It was already tough to survive with such a big player in the industry.

At least if they offended Lin Group, Lin Yuzhen was kind and would not kill them off. But the Yang family?

They would really use all means and ways to force them to close shop!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yang Luolin was pleased with the reaction from everyone.

He wanted to use a gentler method to take Lin Group down, but it seemed like he had to go tough after all.

"Lin Yuzhen, Lin Yuzhen, look at what happened! Who would believe you or support your company now? MUAHAHA!" Yang Luolin laughed maniacally.

Once he had cut off all the companies working with Lin Group, how were they going to expand out of Shengcheng?

They could dream on!

Trying to expand into the southeast region was just their wishful thinking. Now he was going to destroy them if they even tried to get out of this city.

"Young Master Yang, they're here," one of his subordinates whispered into his ear. "Do we make our move?"

An evil glint flashed across Yang Luolin's face. The skilled fighters were here!

Now he could not only deal with Lin Group, but he could also deal with Lin Yuzhen and Jiang Ning. They could forget about having a branch in Shengcheng.

"Take action now!" Yang Luolin said immediately. "Send Lin Yuzhen to my hotel!"

"Yes, Young Master Yang!"

Yang Luolin laughed even more maniacally.

He was going to violate Lin Yuzhen and take revenge on Jiang Ning!

Meanwhile.

Lin Group's Shengcheng branch looked more like a proper office.

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen had come over to settle some matters.

"CEO Lin! The boss of Hui Group, Li Long, would like to see you, he says he has something very important to discuss with you," said Xiaozhao as she walked in.

Lin Yuzhen had just finished signing a whole pile of documents and was stretching her neck and massaging her shoulders. She purposely made a lot of noise to sound like she was in pain in order to get Jiang Ning to massage her shoulders, but Jiang Ning just continued eating his apple on the sofa and didn't

seem to have noticed anything.

"Tell him to come in."

Lin Yuzhen wrinkled her nose and glared at Jiang Ning. She had just teased him once the night before and he was being so mean now.

"CEO Lin! CEO Lin! Bad news!"

Li Long came dashing into the office. His expression was so anxious, he looked like he was about to cry.

He even nearly tripped at the door but didn't care. He ran in so quickly and was really just short of crying.

"CEO Li, what's wrong? What's happened?"

Lin Yuzhen was surprised. She had never seen Li Long so anxious before.

Hui Group was the first supplier that Lin Group worked with in Shengcheng, and Lin Yuzhen's impression of Li Long was excellent. He was a very responsible entrepreneur and even if he faced trouble keeping his factories running, he would never do anything against his conscience.

So what could have made him become like this?

"CEO Lin, that Young Master Yang...that horrible man! He's driving us into a corner!" Li Long's eyes were bloodshot. "He called all the suppliers and retailers and told us to choose either to follow him or Lin Group. If we follow Lin Group, then he will cut off all our business and force us to close down!"

Lin Yuzhen was a little shocked, and there was anger on her face.

"How can that Yang Luolin do such a thing?"

"I refused to follow him, so he...he immediately used his family's influence to block off all my business!"

How could Li Long not be anxious now?

Li Long's phone suddenly rang. He picked it up and after listening to the other party, his eyes became even more teary.

"What? All our payments are overdue? Our retailers have broken all our contracts? We have no more funding for the factory?"

He was a middle aged man, but he was both angry and anxious, so his tears

were going to spill out soon.

Li Long's hand started shaking. "I...I'll think of a way! I'll find some way out! Comfort the staff, there won't be any problems! There won't be any problems!"

"I guarantee it with my life!"

Li Long hung up the phone, then fell to his knees with a thud.

Lin Yuzhen got a fright. "CEO Li, what are you doing?!"

"CEO Lin, we...we're really pushed to a dead end this time!" Li Long's voice was hoarse. The Yang family had pushed them into a dead end.

"What serious matter is this? Why is it a matter of life and death now?" Jiang Ning had been silent all this while, and now he threw the apple core accurately into the trashcan and wiped his hands with tissue as he calmly continued, "Is an investment of \$1 billion enough for you?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



"1...1 billion?"

Li Long was in shock. He thought he had heard wrongly.

\$1 billion!

His factory wasn't even worth \$100 million and Jiang Ning wanted to invest \$1 billion?

"Why? Not enough?" Jiang Ning raised an eyebrow. "Hui Group can just become Lin Group's supplier. As long as you continue to supply to Lin Group, then it's enough to guarantee your future expansion."

"As for the \$1 billion, that will be my personal investment and will have nothing to do with Lin Group. Both companies will still be partners on paper, any problems?"

"No, no problems, but..."

Li Long was stammering over his words because he still couldn't believe it. Hui Group was on the brink of bankruptcy and really couldn't take a joke now.

Even Lin Group couldn't possibly come up with \$1 billion on the spot for investment, right?

"Why are you still hesitating?" Jiang Ning frowned slightly. "You're a grown man but you're so wishy washy! If you want the money, then say so. Otherwise, get lost!"

"I want it! I want it!"

Li Long immediately nodded his head vigorously like a chicken picking up seeds from the ground. He was afraid of missing this opportunity. Even if it turned out to be fake...but then even Lin Yuzhen nodded, so it couldn't be fake.

But Lin Yuzhen had nodded as a natural reaction. She hadn't really realized what was going on yet.

If anybody asked her if she wanted \$1 billion, she would definitely just nod.

"Wait, what?" Lin Yuzhen suddenly realized what was going on. "You're investing \$1 billion into his company?"

"Is it too little?" Jiang Ning asked. "I'm not sure how much is a good amount. Otherwise \$2 billion? Or \$5 billion?"

Li Long felt like his soul was going to leave his body soon.

"It's not too little, it's enough, it's enough!" Li Long hurriedly cut in. He was afraid that if Jiang Ning said one more number, he would die from shock on the spot.

He felt like he was dreaming.

"Then we're good to go. Send me your company's bank account number and I'll transfer the money to you now."

"Now?"

Li Long was shocked again. He stammered, "I...I haven't put together an investment contract and I don't have the company seal with me either."

"No need," Jiang Ning said impatiently. "It's just \$1 billion, there's no need to sign any contract. As long as you know about it."

Nobody had ever dared to cheat him of his money and it wasn't much to Jiang Ning at all. He really wasn't bothered by this amount.

Li Long felt like he was still dreaming. He gave Jiang Ning his company's bank account number and Jiang Ning used his phone to just transfer \$1 billion across. But when he got a nervous and excited and somewhat frightened call from his finance department, Li Long realized this wasn't a dream at all.

\$1 billion!

\$1 billion! How many years did he have to work in order for his factories to earn this much money?

Jiang Ning didn't even bat an eyelid and just decided to invest in him.

He didn't bother with signing a contract or asking further questions, as if he was donating the money to him.

How much money did Jiang Ning really have?

How much money did Lin Group really have?!

"Mr Jiang..." Li Long's Adam's apple moved up and down and his voice trembled slightly. "Hui Group will go wherever Lin Group goes, and if Lin Group needs anything, Hui Group will do everything we can to get it done, no matter what it takes!"

Li Long wasn't a fool. Jiang Ning dared to give him \$1 billion because he was sure that Li Long wasn't going to run off with the money.

Besides, he didn't intend to run at all.

He was going to take Hui Group to greater heights and prove to the Yang family that they would do well without the Yang family!

Jiang Ning remained calm and waved his hands. "Alright now, just do what you're supposed to be doing and Lin Group will make sure you're well rewarded."

"Yes! Yes I'll make sure of it!"

Li Long had no idea how he managed to walk out of Lin Yuzhen's office. He just felt that his legs were still a little weak and a little floaty, and he couldn't seem to even stand properly.

He could only remember how Jiang Ning had said \$1 billion while just casually wiping his fingers.

He was a real tycoon!

The office door was closed behind Li Long.

Lin Yuzhen sat in front of Jiang Ning and she looked at him with her large eyes. She didn't say anything and just stared straight at him.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Zhao has already checked all your business partners. Li Long's character has no issues. He came from a poor family, he's responsible and he's sympathetic, so he's worth my help."

He knew Lin Yuzhen had a lot of questions for him.

"His factory hired a lot of workers who had been retrenched. And the last time his company was in a crisis, he had sold his house and car so that he had enough to pay their salaries."

Jiang Ning smiled and said, "I told you before, a good person begets good."

Lin Yuzhen nodded.

She had always believed this, because Jiang Ning told her so.

She never had any opinion on whatever Jiang Ning decided on, and she always supported him.

But now she had only one question.

"Hubby, exactly how much money do you have?"

She knew Jiang Ning was rich. When they first got married, Jiang Ning was afraid that she would be cold by riding a scooter to work and bought her a BMW. From then on, she thought that Jiang Ning had more than a million dollars in the bank.

Then when he made a phone call at Donghai Bank and nearly made the CEO pee his pants, Lin Yuzhen thought that perhaps Jiang Ning had more than \$10 million in the bank.

But after that Jiang Ning gave Brother Gou and the rest 30 cars in total, which added up to \$15 million. He also bought a new car for Lin Wen which cost more than \$2 million.

He seemed to be printing money or something. He never seemed to run out of money.

Then when Jiang Ning took over Huang Yuming's company to give it to her family and started Lin Group, the initial injection of cash to start the company off was all Jiang Ning's money too.

And now, Jiang Ning had made a personal investment of \$1 billion to Li Long, like he was just buying vegetables at \$1!

How rich was this fellow?!

"I have no idea," Jiang Ning shook his head.

He really had no idea. Money was meaningless to him, so he never bothered about money and wasn't interested in money either.

"What do you mean by you have no idea?"

Lin Yuzhen scoffed and asked nastily, "Are you afraid that I'll fall for your money?"

"I'd be more than happy for you to fall for my money."

Jiang Ning laughed as he pulled Lin Yuzhen's hands and she fell into his arms. Lin Yuzhen got such a shock that her face instantly turned red and she quickly glanced at the office door.

Thankfully it was closed.

"I really don't know how much money I have, but in any case, it should be enough," Jiang Ning said seriously.

He didn't say that if he needed any cash, all the banks in the world would happily give it to him!

Lin Yuzhen nodded. Jiang Ning had a lot of money, but it all belonged to him and had nothing to do with her. She didn't have any business asking about his money.

She was going work hard and fight hard! Someday she would surpass Jiang Ning!

Jiang Ning wasn't worried about any of this. Lin Yuzhen was sitting on his lap right now and was still lost in her own thoughts.

He wondered if he should have another taste of ice cream.

BOM BOM BOM!

Suddenly, someone knocked on the office door hurriedly and nervously.

Lin Yuzhen squeaked and hopped out from Jiang Ning's embrace. She straightened her clothes out and her face couldn't help blushing.

Jiang Ning cursed. Which asshole was out there ruining the moment?

"Wh-who is it?"

"CEO Lin! Brother Ning! Someone's here to make trouble!"

The door opened and Xiaozhao stuck a head in. Her expression was very anxious. "Someone's beat up our security guards!"

KEBAM!

The main door of the office had been kicked open. The glass of the door was broken and there were fragments all over the floor.

BAM!

BAM!

The two security guards howled in pain as they went flying and crashed onto the floor. They couldn't get up at all.

The two men who came stood at nearly 7' tall. Their muscular bodies looked fairly frightening.

Their skin was glistening and dark, and looked as tough as iron.

Those eyes of theirs were malicious, vicious and completely void of feeling.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Which one of you is Jiang Ning?" one of them yelled in a loud and cold voice. "I'm going to break his legs! I'm going to kill him!"

"Which one of you is Lin Yuzhen? I'm taking her away!"

Both their voices were cold and unreasonable.

One wanted Jiang Ning dead, the other wanted to take Lin Yuzhen away.

They had just barged into the office like that. They had never seen anyone so forceful before.

The staff were just concentrating on doing their work earlier, and now they were all pale faced and trembling violently.

They had never seen anything like this before.

"Who...who on earth are you..." One of the male staff was a little bolder and managed to ask through clenched teeth, but his voice was still trembling. "Leave the place now, otherwise...otherwise we'll call the police!"

The two men scanned him and suddenly looked even more murderous than ever. The male staff was frozen with fear and didn't dare to speak anymore.

"Don't make us kill you!"

The two of them started walking in and the female staff all started screaming in fear.

"I'm so surprised that someone dares to kill me in this place."

Jiang Ning emerged from behind the door and his expression was calm.

But he didn't bother hiding the anger and disdain in his eyes.

He could tell that these two were trained in martial arts and seemed fairly violent. They probably killed before.

After cleaning up Shengcheng, such people no longer existed. So these two were definitely sent here by Yang Luolin.

But didn't Yang Luolin find out who was the leader of Shengcheng's illegal circle first?

"You're Jiang Ning?"

They both narrowed their eyes and stared at Jiang Ning at the same time. They

were like two poisonous snakes staring at their prey.

They were trained in martial arts, so they could tell that Jiang Ning knew a thing or two.

But they didn't know how skilled he was until they started fighting. From what they could sense, Jiang Ning was very weak.

"Not bad."

Jiang Ning pulled a chair to sit down. Then he waved his hands to tell the staff to stand behind, so that they wouldn't get blood on themselves later.

Lin Yuzhen didn't even come out of her office. Jiang Ning didn't want her to witness such violence.

"Since you've admitted to being Jiang Ning, then prepare to die!" One of them smiled coldly. "Bro, I'll kill Jiang Ning, you can take Lin Yuzhen away!"

Both of them exchanged glances and were going to make their move.

But Jiang Ning continued sitting where he was without moving.

Hmm? Both of them couldn't help but be wary when they saw this.

After being in this circle for a long time, being cautious was what helped them to stay alive.

When they saw how Jiang Ning didn't seem the least nervous nor worried and continued to keep calm, they couldn't help but suspect that Jiang Ning had something else that they didn't know about.

But Jiang Ning only waved Xiaozhao over to get him a packet of pumpkin seeds. After that, he looked back at the two of them.

"Wait a minute, what did you two say just now?" He started munching on the seeds and pointed at the two of them. "One said he wants to kill me?"

"The other says he wants to take Yuzhen away?"

Jiang Ning nodded and suddenly burst out laughing.

"So you want me to deal with you personally?"

Both of them were confused and didn't know what Jiang Ning was talking about.



What was this about Jiang Ning dealing with them?

Did Jiang Ning think he could deal with them?

He would only be beaten to a pulp and die terribly!

And Lin Yuzhen was going to be screwed over by Yang Luolin until she died!

That was the price that Lin Group had to pay for offending the Yang family!

"This sort of trash doesn't need Big Boss to deal with personally."

Suddenly a voice came from outside the door. It was a voice filled with anger, murder and a tinge of contempt.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It was Huang Yuming!

He was back from the north.

Huang Yuming walked confidently through the door. The way he carried himself was completely different from before.

His face now looked very steady, as if he had gone through a great transformation.

He looked at the two troublemakers and his gaze was icy cold.

"Since when did Big Boss have to deal with a bunch of stray dogs and cats?"

Huang Yuming walked in and Brother Gou and the wolves were behind him. All of them looked extremely murderous!

And behind them were more people...a LOT of people.

There were so many people!

They had surrounded the entire entrance.

Everyone in the illegal circle of Shengcheng had come. Each boss brought a few hundred of their men to rush over as quickly as possible. There were more than 2,000 people standing outside!

It was such a massive crowd, it made everyone's heart tremble.

Jiang Ning continued to eat his pumpkin seeds while the staff behind him were all holding their breaths and couldn't get a single word out.

Xiaozhao knew that Jiang Ning had many friends in Shengcheng because he had told her that she could tell him if she got met with any trouble. But she didn't expect him to have this many friends!

He was amazing!

The two men sent by the Yang family turned to see the huge crowd behind and got a shock. Even after being in the martial arts world for so long, they had never seen this many people in a fight before!

There were at least 2,000 people behind, no?

"Big Boss, you don't have to handle this sort of thing."

Huang Yuming walked over and took a pack of cigarettes out from his pocket.

Jiang Ning took one look and knew that Fei got Huang Yuming to bring these here.

Jiang Ning nodded. Huang Yuming immediately pulled one out, passed it to Jiang Ning and lit it for him.

Huang Yuming then looked over at Brother Gou. "Someone actually dares to make trouble for Big Boss in Tianhai. Looks like without me around, you boys really can't get anything done!"

Brother Gou and the rest didn't dare to say anything.

Huang Yumin finally turned to look at the two troublemakers and his voice instantly became cold.

"Throw them out!"

BOOOOM...

The thirty wolves pounced on them without hesitation.

The two of them didn't even have the chance to fight back. They were immediately dragged out of the door, and the crowd of more than 2,000 people outside rushed in like a wave to drown them both...

They had never experienced such despair in their life. And they had no chance to experience it again.

Shock!

All the staff behind Jiang Ning were so shocked that their hair stood on end.

What was this ability to command so many people?

What sort of terrifying influence was this?!

The two troublemakers were going to be beaten to a pulp!

Meanwhile, Jiang Ning continued sitting where he was, narrowing his eyes in a relaxed manner as he smoked a cigarette he hadn't had in a long while.

Xiaozhao and the other female staff all idolized Jiang Ning and their eyes sparkled brightly.

Jiang Ning was really manly!

That was how a real man ought to be!

Huang Yuming stood by the side respectfully. After this trip to the north, he understood more about Jiang Ning and was even more in awe of Jiang Ning. Jiang Ning was like a god to Huang Yuming now.

"Fei really knows me well," Jiang Ning laughed after he finished the cigarette. He turned to Huang Yuming, "After this trip to the north, you've improved a lot."

Huang Yuming bowed slightly and didn't dare to be complacent at all. "It's all thanks to Big Boss."

"Brother Fei says that he's waiting for you in the north."

Jiang Ning laughed when he heard this.

Looks like Fei had finally finished his preparations. So his plan to move northward could now start!

This huge cleanup was going to shock the world!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning got up from his chair and turned to look at Xiaozhao and the other staff. He had his usual friendly smile on.

"In this company, you don't have to worry about anything, and nobody will dare to harm you. Understand?"

The staff nodded.

Jiang Ning then walked out of the office.

The scene of more than 2,000 people outside the door shocked all the passersby.

Everyone walking along the street were in shock.

Jiang Ning waved his hand and these 2,000 men stepped aside like the tide. They quickly left the place in an orderly fashion. From the time they came till they left, they only beat up the two troublemakers and didn't affect their surroundings at all.

The two men sent by the Yangs were both sprawled on the ground and they couldn't move at all.

Almost every bone in their body was broken!

They were broken one by one!

Their eyes could still move and their nose could barely breathe, but the rest of themselves was as good as mush.

Jiang Ning walked over and looked down at the two of them.

"How much does your Young Master hate you two? You guys killed his dad? Or stole his wife?" he calmly asked. "He actually sent both of you to Shengcheng to die."

Both of them had nothing but terror on their faces. Jiang Ning had a smile on his face, and they felt like they were seeing something more terrifying than a demon.

But they didn't even have the strength to tremble.

Jiang Ning didn't bother about them anymore. There was a trash truck that would clear this sort of trash away later.

He turned around and Huang Yuming immediately reported, "I've located him. Big Boss, are you going to deal with him personally?"

Butler Zhao's information network covered every single bit of Tianhai, and there was no way any information would escape his eye.

It was very easy to find out where Yang Luolin was.

Yang Luolin had actually tried to hit on Lin Yuzhen. That was the worst thing you could do to offend Jiang Ning.

"Since he's asking for a slap in the face, then of course I have to do it myself," replied Jiang Ning.

A few cars drove over. Jiang Ning got in with the others and they drove off.

Lin Yuzhen was still waiting for Jiang Ning to return to the office.

She didn't see Jiang Ning, but Xiaozhao walked into her office with a few ice creams.

"Where's Jiang Ning?"

"Brother Ning had to attend to some matters, he asked me to pass these to you."

Xiaozhao was still trembling because she had been so excited earlier.

"What happened outside? Jiang Ning didn't let me go outside to have a look."

"Nothing!" Xiaozhao remembered what Jiang Ning instructed her. "Brother Ning just went out to take my buttered pumpkin seeds."

Lin Yuzhen didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Did this fellow never grow up?

But after hearing that nothing happened outside, she didn't ask any further. She had a lot of other things to attend to.

.....

At Dragon Bay Hotel.

Yang Luolin had bathed and changed into a sleeping robe. His hair was still a little damp and he looked fairly ruthless.

He had full control over all the partners and retailers that worked with Lin Group, so that was as good as maiming Lin Group's arms and legs.

It was a problem for them to even continue staying in Shengcheng, never mind moving out of Tianhai and into the southeast region.

"You're still too weak to fight with me!"

Yang Luolin looked at himself in the mirror and laughed coldly. "I have never failed to get what I've wanted before!"

The two men that he sent were infamous for being vicious men and they had killed before. They had helped him with several underhanded dealings.

Yang Luolin was very assured that they would kill Jiang Ning and bring Lin Yuzhen to him.

It wouldn't be long before Lin Yuzhen had to kneel down before him to beg for mercy!

BAM!

Just as Yang Luolin was thinking about this, someone kicked his hotel room door open.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yang Luolin got a shock and turned his head violently. "Who's that?!"

"Me!"

Jiang Ning walked in with Huang Yuming while the wolves stood outside the door.

Yang Luolin's eyes narrowed and he was terrified when he saw Jiang Ning walk in.

"Why...why are you here?"

He immediately moved backwards and looked around to see if he could grab anything as a weapon. But when he saw Huang Yuming and the wolves outside, his expression changed immediately.

"What are you trying to do? I'm from the Yang family! You wouldn't dare to lay a finger on me!"

Huang Yuming pulled a chair out and Jiang Ning sat down on it.

He looked at Yang Luolin and waved to him to come over.

Yang Luolin didn't move, so Huang Yuming went up and slapped Yang Luolin so hard that he fell to the floor.

"Ahhh..."

Yang Luolin howled as he clutched his face. Huang Yuming didn't say anything. He grabbed Yang Luolin's hair and dragged him to where Jiang Ning was, then kicked the back of his knees to make him kneel down.

"You...you dare to..."

PAK!

Jiang Ning didn't let him finish speaking. He slapped him and sent one of Yang Luolin's teeth flying out.

"Did I say you can talk?"

Yang Luolin was furious but he didn't dare to say anymore. His bloodied tooth had landed on the floor and it frightened him.

"The Yang family is used to being domineering since they have people in both the legal and illegal circles of Jianzhou," said Jiang Ning. "But this is Tianhai."



Yang Luolin stared hard at Jiang Ning with eyes filled with hatred and were threatening, but Jiang Ning wasn't bothered by him at all.

"You shouldn't have been so greedy and covet Lin Group. And you really shouldn't have tried to hit on my woman!"

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes and patted Yang Luolin's face. "I can tell you what happened to the last one who tried to be funny with my wife now."

Huang Yuming took his phone out and opened a photo.

There wasn't anybody in the photo. There was only a flower that bloomed beautifully.

Yang Luolin looked at the flower and didn't understand.

"This fertilizer is full of nutrients and it's made this flower bloom so beautifully."

Yang Luolin's face instantly paled.

He felt as if his soul had left his body.

Fertilizer?

That man had become fertilizer?

Was Jiang Ning a demon?!

Yang Luolin was trembling all over and he felt very cold. It was as if he was freezing and even his lips were trembling.

"You...you can't kill me..." His voice was trembling as it was filled with great fear. "I'm from the Yang family, so if you touch me, my family won't let you off!"

"I can't wait," said Jiang Ning calmly.

BOOM.

Yang Luolin felt like he had been struck by lightning. What did Jiang Ning just say?

He couldn't wait?

He wanted the Yang family to deal with him as soon as possible?

He was nuts!

He was definitely nuts!

Yang Luolin was now the most terrified he had ever been and it was too late for regrets now. He tried to struggle free, but there was no way he could get out of here.

He was so terrified that he peed his pants, and there was a disgusting smell coming from the floor.

His body immediately went weak as he collapsed on the floor and he trembled violently.

"...I was wrong...I was wrong! Jiang Ning, spare me! Please, spare me!"

"I'll get out of Tianhai right now! I'll get out right now!"


"You can hit me! Or break my legs! Just please...please don't kill me! Don't kill me!"

Yang Luolin continued to cry for mercy and didn't look like that arrogant Young Master Yang anymore. He started to kowtow with great force and soon there was blood on his forehead.

But of course Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered. He got up and left.

"I don't want to become fertilizer! I don't want to become fertilizer!!!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning didn't care about his pleading. The next thing he heard was a bloodcurdling scream.

This was the fate that everyone who made trouble in Shengcheng met. Moreover, Yang Luolin was actually stupid enough to have ideas about Lin Yuzhen.

That was punishable by death!

Donghai was forbidden territory, and now, Shengcheng had become part of that.

This was Jiang Ning's information network's headquarters, so it was a very important place to protect.

News of Yang Luolin's disappearance quickly spread everywhere, and now the ones who betrayed Lin Group to follow the Yang family became afraid.

Everyone knew that Lin Group was not one to be trifled with, but all this had happened just over the span of a few hours.

Yang Luolin said he was going to destroy Lin Group and kill Jiang Ning. But now?

Jiang Ning was still well and alive, and someone even saw Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen eat at a famous restaurant. And Yang Luolin?

He had disappeared!

Nobody could locate him!

Everyone knew how things must have ended.

No matter how powerful the Yang family was, this was Shengcheng after all.

Was anyone who made trouble in Shengcheng still alive?

All of them started panicking. They were worried and afraid – afraid that Lin Group would settle this feud with them some day, and worried that Lin Yuzhen would be unkind to them.

"Don't scare yourselves anymore, CEO Lin is a very kindhearted person and won't take this to heart."

"Exactly, we were forced to make this decision and we didn't purposely want to betray Lin Group. She's such a nice person, she'll forgive us."

"Let's all beg her together. Once CEO Lin takes pity on us, we'll be fine."

.....

They all got together and thought of a plan.

They knew that Lin Yuzhen was kindhearted, sincere and friendly, and that was precisely why they were willing to offend Lin Group instead of the Yang family.

After all, Yang Luolin was a really domineering and malicious character. He was very vicious and acted without mercy.

But Lin Yuzhen wasn't like that.

She was very kind at heart, so there was no way she would force them into a corner like this.

They were all waiting outside the Lin Group office very early in the morning.

It wasn't that they didn't want to go in, but there were several fierce looking people outside the entrance and they didn't dare to go in.

Huang Yuming had arranged for these people to ensure the office's safety. In fact, there were at least a hundred people within a mile's radius to make sure that there was no problem here.

Huang Yuming had returned, so Jiang Ning could relax. Interacting too much with Brother Gou made Jiang Ning's head hurt.

There were many things that Jiang Ning didn't need to say and Huang Yuming would attend to it first.

After standing outside for so long, their legs were tired. Lin Yuzhen wasn't here yet and some of the older ones found it hard to continue standing.

"Hello, young man, could we wait in the meeting room?" one of them smiled sheepishly and tried to offer one of the men a pack of very expensive cigarettes and was very polite to him.

"Without CEO Lin's permission, anyone who tries to go in will get their legs broken!"

Nobody cared about those cigarettes and nobody bothered being polite to them.

They had even heard them talk about how they were going to use Lin Yuzhen's kindness to gain her forgiveness. The fact that they didn't bash them up right

there and then was an amazing display of self control.

The bosses didn't dare to say anything after being yelled at.

These men were all vicious ones and nobody dared to offend them within Shengcheng.

They had heard all about those 2,000 men that came the day before.

After a long time, a BMW arrived at the entrance. Lin Yuzhen was the one who stepped out of that car.

"CEO Lin! CEO Lin!"

"CEO Lin! You're finally here!"

All of them started surrounding her the moment they saw her and put on their most pitiful, helpless and regretful face.

It was as if they had suffered a great tragedy and was here to complain about it to Lin Yuzhen.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Did you come to the wrong place?" Lin Yuzhen frowned and didn't seem to have noticed all their pitiful expressions. She calmly remarked, "If I remember correctly, all of you had gone to work with the Yang family."

She was angry.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything and just went into the office without even looking at them.

He had to let Lin Yuzhen handle these matters herself. Then only would she mature.

If he was the one making the decision, these people wouldn't even have the chance to stand around here.

"CEO Lin! It's a misunderstanding! It's really all a misunderstanding!" one of them quickly stepped in to explain. "We've always been partners with Lin Group, and this will never change."

"The Yang family forced us! They used all sorts of ways to force us to switch camps!"

"That's right, CEO Lin. We really didn't have a choice. Compared to the Yang family, we're really unable to fight back."

All of them kept saying such things and didn't hide any of the helplessness or suffering they felt.

Lin Yuzhen looked at them and felt even more disappointed.

If they had just admitted to switching camps and apologized, she would have felt better. But now?

They had all pushed the responsibility away from themselves, as if they weren't the ones who made this choice and the Yang family had made this choice for them.

The Yang family was indeed powerful, but Li Long from Hui Group had dared to side with her, while they had chosen to give in to the Yang family. Did they think that Lin Group was easy to bully?

"Oh really? I heard that all of you were very happy when you agreed to work with the Yang family."

She continued in an expressionless voice, "If there's nothing else, please don't disrupt my work any longer. Lin Group has many things to attend to."

"CEO Lin!"

"Wait up, CEO Lin!"

When they noticed that Lin Yuzhen was angry, they exchanged glances and their tone of voice changed.

"CEO Lin, be a little more magnanimous to us, we really had no choice. My factory has more than 600 workers who need to be fed."

"I just increased my workers' salaries recently because of our partnership with Lin Group, which gave me the confidence to pay them more. CEO Lin, you can't disappoint my workers!"

"That's right, CEO Lin, it's hard on everybody. I hope you can give us a chance. Even if you don't give us the chance, then consider it as giving our workers a chance?"

They all spoke very sincerely and had pleading looks on their faces. If Lin Yuzhen said she would forgive them if they knelt down, they would definitely kneel down.

Lin Yuzhen's kindheartedness was no secret in Tianhai.

She had picked her business partners mostly with these bottomrung workers in mind.

So they were sure that Lin Yuzhen would not reject them once they used this reason to persuade her.

But Lin Yuzhen became even more disappointed.

"That's right, it's hard for everybody."

Lin Yuzhen nodded.

They were immediately heartened by these words. Lin Yuzhen was giving in.

There was no way for someone like Lin Yuzhen to be cruel to them after hearing about their workers' plight.

They had guessed it right. Lin Group would just be angry but would not push them into a corner. Even if Lin Group was upset with the bosses, they wouldn't vent their anger on their workers.

With this card in their hands, they weren't afraid anymore.

"But did you think it was easy for Lin Group?"

Before the bosses could feel happy, Lin Yuzhen's voice became stern. "My workers had worked so hard and did so much. You think it was easy for them?"

"All of you just betrayed Lin Group like that, so who is going to bear Lin Group's losses? My workers?!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



"Did you know that Lin Group worked with you at a loss?"

"Did you know how much money, resources and manpower Lin Group put in to expand the market?"

"You don't know any of this because you only think about yourselves and your own benefit, and that's how you ended up betraying Lin Group. And now you've come looking for me after betraying Lin Group. Aren't you ashamed of yourselves?"

Every word from Lin Yuzhen was like a hammer that smashed hard on their hearts.

All the bosses started to look pale and their expressions stiffened.

They never thought that Lin Yuzhen would be so angry and wouldn't spare them a thought at all.

"None of you is fit to be an entrepreneur! I'm so ashamed of all of you!"

Lin Yuzhen spat this out coldly, then turned and left.

All of them looked at one another. This was completely different from the ending they had expected.

Lin Yuzhen didn't forgive them at all, even though they pleaded with her and looked so sad and apologetic. Lin Yuzhen didn't even give them a chance.

"CEO Lin! CEO Lin!"

They quickly started running after Lin Yuzhen.

If they couldn't get Lin Yuzhen's forgiveness, then their business was really going to close down. There would be no way for them to continue running their business in Shengcheng.

"Stop right there!"

The security guards at the door stretched their arms out and blocked the bosses from going further. They coldly said, "You didn't understand what we said earlier?"

None of them dared to take a step forward. They knew very well that these security guards would really break their legs!

"We...we'll wait here! We'll wait for CEO Lin to come out!"

"I don't believe that CEO Lin would watch our companies close down!"

"You're right! Let's just wait here! CEO Lin won't leave us in the lurch!"

.....

The bosses clenched their teeth and just sat down on the floor without any regard for their image. They were going to wait for Lin Yuzhen to come out again.

They didn't think Lin Yuzhen would really ignore them. At most, they would call their workers to beg Lin Yuzhen. Surely she wouldn't remain so hardhearted, right?

Lin Yuzhen wasn't such a person!

Someone took his phone out on the spot.

"Hello? Call a few of the aunties from the factory to come over. Yes yes, to the Lin Group office, tell them to come and plead with CEO Lin.."

The security guards at the door instantly had a dark expression on their faces.

They knew that Lin Yuzhen was kindhearted and she had never looked down on them as security guards. In fact she was always concerned for them and they were so touched by her. And now there were people who actually wanted to use Lin Yuzhen's kindness for their own gain.

This made them furious!

"Trying to make trouble here?" spoke the leader of the security guards in a cold voice. He walked over and grabbed the phone away.

CRAACK!

He had crushed the phone in his hands!

"I would advise all of you to be good people, otherwise, face the consequences yourselves!"

All the bosses paled in the face. They had nearly forgotten that this was Lin Group!

More than 2,000 men had gathered here the day before, and Young Master Yang had also disappeared overnight. They were still standing here hoping to make use of Lin Yuzhen's kindness and wanted to threaten Lin Yuzhen?

They were obviously asking to be killed!

They didn't dare to say anymore and quietly left the place.

If they stayed there any longer, those security guards who respected Lin Yuzhen so much might lose control and beat them up.

In the office.

Jiang Ning sat quietly on the sofa and ate fruits.

Lin Yuzhen still had a conflicted expression on her face, as if she had gone through a vigorous mental battle earlier.

It made her feel very uncomfortable to make this decision, especially when those bosses used their bottomrung workers to threaten her.

"Do you think I made the right decision?" she couldn't help but ask Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning peeled a grape and stuffed it into Lin Yuzhen's mouth. "Is there any problem?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"They made a mistake, so they have to bear the consequences of that. Why should you bear it for them?"

"What about their bottomrung workers?"

Lin Yuzhen was still very apologetic towards them.

Jiang Ning sighed. "Wifey, there's a limit to what each person can do, so we just do what we can. Besides, you've already done the best you can."

How was Lin Yuzhen going to sympathize with so many bottomrung workers?

Besides, not everyone was worthy to be pitied.

These were all different matters and had to be sorted out carefully.

Lin Yuzhen nodded. She seemed to have suddenly thought of something and she became all motivated again.

"Why, not eating the grapes anymore? I can peel more for you."

"No, I don't want anymore grapes."

Lin Yuzhen got up to leave, then suddenly turned and kissed Jiang Ning on the cheek. "Thank you hubby!"

"There's a limit to what one person can do and it's hard to help a lot of people at once. So I'll work harder and become stronger so that I can help more people!"

Lin Yuzhen was filled with energy again, and she ran off to start working.

Jiang Ning touched his cheek and he was still in a daze. He had just commented casually and it made Lin Yuzhen so excited. He considered not washing his face when he got back home.

"Nah, I'd better wash it. What if she kisses my lips next time? Surely I can't go without brushing my teeth?"

Jiang Ning laughed to himself as he leisurely threw a grape into his own mouth.

-----  
Meanwhile,

After Lin Yuzhen refused to help them, the bosses couldn't just sit around and

wait to die.

Since they had lost the support of this continually expanding ship called Lin Group, they could see what sort of future they had in Shengcheng.

They had no other choice but to continue clinging onto the Yang family.

They started planning together and finally reached a consensus to head for Jianzhou.

This was their last resort.

They bought plane tickets and immediately headed for the Yang family in Jianzhou.

At the same time.

Jianzhou in the southeast region.

Jianzhou was a major city in the southeast region. Corporations grew quickly here and several powers were involved here. The Yang family had controlled this city for more than sixty years and were now at their third generation. They were of very high standing here.

They had family members in both the legal and illegal circles, so there were some who secretly called the Yang family Jianzhou's royal family.

The Yang family was famous for being domineering. They weren't just domineering in Jianzhou, they were also like this in the whole southeast region.

In the main hall of the Yang house.

The oldest in the family, Yang Dong, had a head full of white hair, but he was still energetic. He pounded his walking stick on the floor. "Where's he? Where's my grandson? He's gone out for so many days without calling home, has he gone partying or something?"

"Dad, Luolin is all grown up, you don't have to worry about him," said the current head of the Yang family, Yang Huang, with a smile. "You're the one who brought him up and we have to hand the Yang family to him one day too, so don't worry."

Yang Dong scoffed and pointed at Yang Huang and shouted, "You still dare to say this!"

"I had to help you take care of your own son, and I don't want to talk about your daughter!"

Yang Huang just smiled. He couldn't argue back when it came to his daughter.

He had one son and one daughter. His son, Yang Luolin, had been training under his father and was already regarded as the heir to the Yang family. But his daughter was completely uncontrollable.

He knew that his daughter was more outstanding than his son and was more suitable to be the heir, but in the Yang family, the position of the eldest son was unmovable.

"She could have been a well mannered young lady, but she decided to be a madwoman instead! Being a wild child out there! Who would want her like this? How is our family going to arrange for her to marry one of our partners? ARGH!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yang Dong's face was all red from anger.

He had no comments about Yang Luolin because he had brought the boy up himself and was obviously pleased with him.

So there wasn't any problem in letting Yang Luolin take over the Yang family in the future.

But Yang Huang's daughter, Yang Xin, had decided to replace the effeminate 'Xin' in her name with a masculine 'Xiao'!

Was she still a girl at this rate?

Yang Huang also had a headache when it came to his daughter. He couldn't control her at all.

"Dad, don't be angry, I'll talk to her."

"You think it's any use? If talking to her worked, do you think she would turn out like that now?"

Yang Dong scoffed. "I had plans to send her to the north and marry that family so that our family can continue to stay in Jianzhou undisturbed for another few decades. But now that she's become like that, how can I send her there?"

"If I send such a woman over to them, it's as good as demolishing their house instead!"

He was furious.

The Yang family favored boys over girls, and to Yang Dong, only the boys were eligible to inherit the family assets. The only use girls had was to be married off to powerful families so that his family could get more resources.

But Yang Xiao's current state made this impossible.

Yang Huang didn't dare to say anything and just nodded.

"Forget it, she's all grown up now and I can't control her anyway. As long as she doesn't make trouble it's fine," Yang Dong said coldly. "She hasn't even come home in months! She has no regard for her grandfather at all!"

"Dad, it's not so serious. I'll call her in a while and tell her to visit you," said Yang Huang.

"Once Luolin is back, tell him to look for me," Yang Dong waved his hands. Whether his granddaughter visited him or not didn't matter to him. He got up

and walked away while leaning on his walking stick. "If Yang Xiao doesn't like coming home, then tell her to just stop coming back."

Yang Huang shook his head after Yang Dong left.

Yang Xiao had become like this mostly because of Yang Dong.

Yang Dong only favored boys, so Yang Xiao was always disregarded from a very young age. She had built up a lot of angst in her heart, so she gave up studying and went around to make a lot of trouble, and she ended up meeting a lot of very complicated people.

And now she had even made a name for herself.

She was a daughter of a well reputed family, but she spent her time with a bunch of gangsters all day. That was very bad for the family's reputation!

The more Yang Huang thought about this, the angrier he became. He immediately made a call.

After the phone rang for a long time, someone finally picked it up and all he heard was tired noises.

"Yang Xiao! How long has it been since you last came home? Don't you know that you should visit your grandfather?!"

He immediately started shouting.

After a moment of silence, a male voice could be heard.

"Sis, who is it waking us up so early in the morning."

"Yeah...Sis, you're the most amazing out of all of us. Two of us can't take it anymore."

Yang Huang's expression immediately turned grim when he heard these voices.

What on earth was Yang Xiao doing?!

Why was she sleeping with two men?!

"Yang Xiao!!"

"What are you shouting about?" a lazy voice responded. "What difference does it make whether the Yang family has me around or not? That old man only likes Yang Luolin anyway, so why would he want me to visit him?"



"You..."

"Dad, if you have anything to say, just spit it out. Otherwise I'm going back to sleep."

"Yang Xiao! You will be the death of me!"

Yang Huang was furious. "Your brother has gone missing, don't you know?"

"Why would I know anything about that? You know how wild he gets out there, you think he's really that outstanding?"

"You..."

Yang Huang was afraid that he would literally die from his anger, so he suppressed his fury and said, "Quickly send someone to search for him, I know that you have the ability to. Also, change that name of yours back!"

He hung up the phone and his face was all red.

He really couldn't control his daughter anymore.

But he had to admit that besides leading a promiscuous lifestyle, Yang Xiao was indeed very capable. Her name was much more useful than his own in Jianzhou, regardless of whether you were talking about the legal or the illegal circle.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

If Yang Dong hadn't insisted that Yang Luolin was going to be his heir, Yang Huang would rather Yang Xiao take over instead.

"If Yang Luolin doesn't buck up, I don't know who can take over this family!"

Once Yang Dong passed away, the family would be a complete mess. It was a terrible headache for Yang Huang if his two children started fighting.

On the other side.

Yang Xiao was lying on the bed with nothing on. Her hair was a mess and her makeup was all smeared, but she didn't care.

There were two handsome men lying obediently next to her and gently massaging her back.

"Get lost."

Yang Xiao snapped at them after throwing her phone aside. The two men quickly got up and left with terror on their faces. Neither dared to complain.

To Yang Xiao, they were merely toys.

If they made Yang Xiao happy, then they could live a good life. If they made Yang Xiao unhappy, then they wouldn't even live to see the next day.

Yang Xiao rolled out of bed. Her tall figure was even sexier than a model's, and because she worked out, her skin was taut and you could even see some abdominal muscles.

She looked at herself in the mirror and scoffed coldly.

"If I were a man, Yang Luolin would be nothing."

Yang Xiao picked her clothes up from the floor and wore them simply. Then she made a phone call.

"Where's Yang Luolin?"

"He's disappeared."

The person on the other side had been clearly instructed to follow Yang Luolin all the time, so he had a response for her immediately. "After he arrived in Tianhai, he has been missing since yesterday. He asked for two men from the family and the two men have also disappeared."

Yang Xiao frowned slightly. "Could he be dead?"

"It's very possible."

She suddenly burst out laughing loudly and her whole body started shaking. Anyone who saw that part of her body that kept shaking up and down would definitely feel a rush through their body.

"Dead? That's great. I didn't even have to do anything."

Yang Xiao coldly went on, "Now that the heir to the Yang family is dead, then who else can inherit the family besides myself?"

"Send me all the information you have."

"Yes boss. Also, there are some suppliers from Shengcheng who claim to have signed an agreement with Yang Luolin, and they're on their way to look for the Yangs now."

"Have they reached yet?"

"No."

"Bring them to me," Yang Xiao ordered without hesitation.

She was very pretty, but her eyes were as malicious as a poisonous snake.

She also hated her family because of the way her grandfather favored boys over the girls. But Yang Xiao turned out very differently from how kindhearted Lin Yuzhen turned out.

She was very vicious and merciless, so in Jianzhou, nobody dared to offend her. In fact, some of the bosses of the illegal circle were just her boytoys and she was the one spending money to take care of them.

"Yang Dong, Yang Dong. Yang Luolin is dead, aren't you disappointed?"

Yang Xiao laughed coldly and there was disdain and hatred in her eyes. "Everybody thinks the one who died is your grandson. Who would have thought that the one who died is actually your son?"

These words would have shaken up all of Jianzhou if anybody overheard her!

Yang Luolin wasn't Yang Huang's son? Instead he was Yang Dong's son and Yang Huang's brother?

Nobody knew that Yang Dong had made a cuckold of his own son.

Yang Dong wanted to be in full control of the family and only allowed his own

children to inherit the family. Even his grandchildren were not eligible.

That's why he didn't even let his daughter-in-law off, and bedded her before his own son did!

"It's too bad, the Yang family is now mine!"

Yang Xiao started laughing maniacally. She was befitting of her nickname, Madwoman, since she was domineering and audacious beyond belief. "I don't know who killed Yang Luolin, but I've got to thank that person!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

That way, Yang Xiao didn't have to do anything.

She had planned to do this a long time ago, but she intended to kill Yang Luolin only when Yang Dong was about to die, then she would take the entire family for herself.

But this fellow actually died first. That saved her a lot of trouble.

Yang Xiao was in a good mood. She got changed and headed for the agreed venue.

Some suppliers from Shengcheng had come because Yang Luolin had told them to work with the Yang family.

But since she was going to be the one who called the shots in the Yang family, they had to go through her first.

A curvaceous body was lying on the soft sofa in front of them. The bosses from Shengcheng had never seen anyone discuss business like that.

"This is...?" one of them had to ask.

"The Young Mistress of the Yang family, Yang Xiao."

Yang Xiao lay on the sofa with her legs crossed. They were long and straight, and all the old men in the room couldn't help but be attracted to them, yet they dared not keep looking at them either.

"You are Yang Luolin's honored guests?"

"Oh no we wouldn't dare to call ourselves that."

Yang Xiao laughed coldly. So they knew their place.

She glanced at all the old men in front of her. They were probably all emptied out from years of alcohol and women by now.

"Yang Luolin wanted to take down Lin Group of Tianhai, that much I know. You all are his business partners in Tianhai," Yang Xiao went straight to the point. "I don't care whether Yang Luolin is dead or alive. I just want to know, who is behind this Lin Group?"

She was a real spitfire, but she wasn't a reckless person.

Yang Luolin was a member of the Yang family after all, and that old man had already decided that he would be the heir to the Yang family.

Not just anyone would dare to kill Yang Luolin.

If that old man found out, wouldn't he go mad and kill that person off?

That was the precious son he had at an old age!

"Lin Group is originally from Donghai and started as a small company in this small city. Back then, the Lin family..." the leader of the group immediately told her everything he knew.

He talked about how the old Lin Group was split, how Lin Wen started the new Lin Group, how it rose in Donghai then expanded to Shengcheng. He also talked about how it was now headed towards the southeast region and was expanding at an extremely rapid speed.

They wanted to work with the Yang family, so they had to prove themselves useful to the Yangs, otherwise the Yang family wouldn't care about them.

After betraying Lin Group, they had no other choice but to rely on the Yang family.

"The CEO of Lin Group, Lin Yuzhen, has a husband, but he's actually married into her family. This man is incredible – apparently he had gotten to know someone back when he was still roaming the streets, and now he has become the leader of Tianhai's illegal circles."

Yang Xiao's eyes narrowed. "A husband who married into the family?"

"That's right, this matter shook all of Donghai. The old man controlling the Lin family favored boys over girls and always looked down on his granddaughter. He was afraid that she would fight with his eldest grandson over the family assets, so he found a homeless man to marry his granddaughter."

PIANG!

Yang Xiao smashed the teacup in her hand to the floor.

Everyone was so shocked they didn't dare to speak anymore.

She snorted coldly. So there was more than one old fogey who favored boys over girls, huh.

"So you're saying that this Lin Group expanded so rapidly thanks to that boss of the illegal circle?"

"And so Yang Luolin died at the hands of that boss?"

"That's probably what happened."

Yang Xiao smiled and she was pleased. It was great that Yang Luolin was dead, but it was too bad that she wasn't the one who killed him.

Yang Luolin had bullied her badly since they were children.

She never expected that Lin Yuzhen had been in the same predicament as she was.

But compared to herself, Lin Yuzhen was too weak and allowed others to bully her. She even obediently married a homeless man! What an embarrassment!

An insult to women!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

All the suppliers didn't dare to speak anymore. This Young Mistress Yang was a little unpredictable and she was quite scary.

They continued standing there nervously. They wanted to look at that pair of long and charming legs but didn't dare to. They would occasionally steal a glance, then look back down at the floor.

"Enough. Since you want to work with the Yang family, then as long as you're useful to me, I will be agreeable," Yang Xiao finally spoke up. "But for the moment, I will need to consider a few things first. Or rather, I will need to go to Tianhai to observe some things first."

"Yes of course, that's only correct. We are more than happy for Young Mistress Yang to come and have a look."

"We will go back right now and get ready, we welcome Young Mistress Yang to come anytime!"

All of them quickly nodded and said these things very politely.

"I'll be there tomorrow."

Yang Xiao waved her hands and they all quickly left the room. They didn't dare to hold her up any longer.

She continued to lie on the sofa leisurely. Her voluptuous body really made one's blood rush!

"How can a woman be so weak? She actually married a homeless man? What a disgrace to women!" Yang Xiao spat out unhappily. "If she doesn't dare to kill him, I'll help her kill him!"

She hated seeing women being forced to do things they didn't want to or to be humiliated, never mind this sort of forced marriage to someone the girl didn't even like.

Lin Yuzhen had probably never seen that homeless man before getting married, right?

"Men!"

Yang Xiao called out and several men came walking in.

"Tell Yan Chong that I want two tigers to accompany me to Tianhai."

"Boss, there was quite a bit of commotion in Tianhai not too long ago and it might be quite dangerous. Do you want me to take a look first?"



"No need," Yang Xiao laughed coldly. "I'm going to thank someone over there, so they wouldn't come after me with knives, would they now?"

She then rolled off the sofa and the silk pajamas she was wearing slipped off her, revealing her curvaceous figure. Even though her subordinates knew that their boss was a very open minded woman, they were still not used to it and quickly ran out of the room.

"Humph, I wonder what expression that Yang Dong would have once he finds out his precious son is already dead?"

Yang Xiao wondered if she should go back home just to anger that old man.

Or maybe he had already died by now?

"Forget it, he's going to die sooner or later. I'll kill that homeless man first."

After she made that decision, she got ready to leave.

Meanwhile.

Lin Yuzhen had finished a whole day of work in Shengcheng and she exhaled deeply.

It would take some time before everything in Shengcheng really settled down. It was too tiring to shuttle between Donghai and Shengcheng everyday, and it was even more tiring for Jiang Ning to keep driving back and forth.

So Butler Zhao prepared a room for them in Masquerade Club for Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen to stay temporarily.

"Xiaozhao, where's your Brother Ning?"

She stretched herself lazily, wondering if she should soak in the hot spring and do a spa session to relax.

"He said he has some matters to attend to and has gone to Masquerade Club. He's already arranged for someone to send you there too," Xiaozhao quickly replied.

Lin Yuzhen nodded. "Then you can accompany me to the hot spring."

She took her bag and walked out with Xiaozhao. They had just walked out of the office entrance when a Hummer stopped in front of them.

The car door opened, and a tall and icy faced lady stepped out. She was so breathtakingly gorgeous.

Even a beautiful woman like Lin Yuzhen was shocked when she saw Yang Xiao. Could a woman so gorgeous exist?

"You are Lin Yuzhen?"

Yang Xiao noticed Lin Yuzhen looking at her, so she looked Lin Yuzhen up and down too. She was such a pure and innocent girl, and looked so weak and easy to bully.

After Lin Yuzhen nodded, Yang Xiao went straight to the point. "Where's that homeless man who's taken over your life? I'll help you kill him!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Yuzhen was stunned.

Who was this woman?!

Why did she immediately start talking about kill someone? She wanted to kill a homeless man? A homeless man who had taken over Lin Yuzhen's life?

Who was she talking about?

Jiang Ning?!

"I'm asking you," Yang Xiao was much taller than Lin Yuzhen and she looked down at Lin Yuzhen with a cold expression, "Where's that homeless man? I'll kill him for you!"

"Who are you?"

Lin Yuzhen didn't answer her question and asked her another question instead.

She didn't know who this woman was, and would definitely never agree to let her kill Jiang Ning.

"You don't have to know who I am. You just have to tell me where that homeless man is. I'm going to kill him."

Yang Xiao didn't want to waste time chit chatting. She looked at Lin Yuzhen and started thinking that this sort of woman led a sad existence.

She was weak, bullied by everyone and didn't dare to stand up for herself.

"You can't kill him," Lin Yuzhen shook her head.

"What did you say?"

Yang Xiao narrowed her eyes and her expression started to turn nasty. She was here to stand up for Lin Yuzhen but now Lin Yuzhen was saying that she couldn't kill that homeless man?

Why couldn't she kill a homeless man who bullied women?

She said she was going to kill him, so that's what she was going to do!

"He's my husband, you can't kill him," Lin Yuzhen replied her seriously.

Yang Xiao was stunned for a moment, then she burst out laughing loudly like she had gone mad.

"Your husband? You treat a homeless man who took over your life as your husband? What a joke!"

Her face fell. "Looks like you're really useless and you're really too weak. I initially sympathized with you, but it looks like..."

"Why do I need your sympathy?"

Lin Yuzhen frowned and was getting more and more confused.

Was this woman a nutcase?

Lin Yuzhen then took a few steps back to keep her distance from Yang Xiao. A few security guards noticed what was happening and immediately stood in front of Lin Yuzhen and looked warily at Yang Xiao.

"Hahaha! You don't need my sympathy? You're not worthy of my sympathy!"

"What a disgrace to women! You've been treated as a toy and bullied by others but you've actually accepted it as your fate," Yang Xiao's face was filled with disdain and contempt. "Women like you deserve to be ordered about and bullied by others! Looks like that homeless man is living well huh."

"What nonsense are you spouting!" Lin Yuzhen started getting angry. "Who on earth are you? Why are you creating trouble here?"

This woman had babbled so much nonsense and kept saying that she was weak. How was she weak?

This woman even said that her man was a homeless man and wanted to kill him. If she wasn't crazy, then what was she?

"CEO Lin, ignore her, let's go."

Xiaozhao pulled Lin Yuzhen behind her and started pulling her aside. The security guards protected them and allowed Lin Yuzhen to get into the car safely.

Yang Xiao didn't bother chasing after her. She didn't care to.

She coldly glanced at the security guards, then didn't bother about them. She wasn't bothered by these lowly security guards.

"At first I thought she was worthy of my sympathy, but it looks like she's getting her just desserts!" Yang Xiao turned and hopped back into her car. "I'm going to track that homeless man down and kill him. Also, that Lin Yuzhen...HUMPH!"

A woman who didn't deserve her sympathy didn't deserve to live either. She was a disgrace to women!

The Hummer drove off quickly and disappeared into the distance.

Lin Yuzhen reached Masquerade Club and was still feeling a little fearful.

How did she end up running into a crazy woman like that?

"What's wrong with the world these days? Why are there so many crazy people?" Xiaozhao held Lin Yuzhen's hand and she still looked scared. "CEO Lin, I think we should let Brother Gou protect us."

They got such a terrible fright earlier.

Jiang Ning was with Butler Zhao and they were having tea at the back. He saw that Lin Yuzhen had walked in very quickly and she still looked a little frantic.

"What's happened?" asked Jiang Ning. "Why are you so frightened?"

"I ran into a crazy person, and it was a woman," Lin Yuzhen patted her own chest. "She said she wanted to stand up for me and kill you!"

Jiang Ning was taken aback. Some woman wanted to stand up for Lin Yuzhen and kill him?

What on earth.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Looks like she's here." Butler Zhao poured a cup of tea for Lin Yuzhen and calmly explained, "The Madwoman of Jianzhou."

"Who's that?"

Lin Yuzhen took a sip of tea to calm herself down as she asked curiously. Madwoman? What a domineering nickname.

"The eldest daughter of the Yang family, Yang Xiao. Yang Luolin's younger sister."

Butler Zhao had already gathered all the information about the Yang family. The family would definitely notice Yang Luolin's disappearance, but he didn't expect Yang Xiao to come first.

"Her name was originally Yang Xin, then she changed her name to sound like a man's name instead. The Yang family favors boys over girls, so she's been disregarded by the family all her life. Yang Luolin was named as the heir very early on, so naturally, Yang Xiao became very indignant about that."

Butler Zhao continued to explain, "Right now, Yang Xiao's ability is much stronger than Yang Luolin. She has very strong connections in both the legal and illegal circles of Jianzhou."

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes. "What a tyrant queen."

"Then why does she want to kill Jiang Ning?" Lin Yuzhen asked angrily. "On what grounds?"

"Hoho, as I said earlier, she's been disregarded all her life, so she's very controlling and domineering, especially when she sees other women being bullied. Many men have died at her hands."

Butler Zhao sighed.

Even though they went through a similar experience in their childhood, Lin Yuzhen had kept her pure and kindhearted personality, while Yang Xiao had become a full fledged demon.

To her, the fact that Jiang Ning dared to marry Lin Yuzhen despite being a homeless man made him one of her targets.

Jiang Ning couldn't help but shake his head. "This sort of woman is really asking to be dealt with."

She wanted to rule over the world. Even men weren't as insane as Yang Xiao. This woman's mind was completely twisted.

"Yuzhen, did you refuse her?" Butler Zhao suddenly asked her.

"Of course," replied Lin Yuzhen.

How could she allow someone to kill her man?

"Then I'm afraid she won't let you off either."

Lin Yuzhen didn't really understand, but Jiang Ning's face immediately became grim.

He didn't care if anyone wanted to kill him. There were so many people who wanted to kill him anyway, someone like Yang Xiao would have to take a number behind at least 20,000 people.

But if she dared to even think about harming Lin Yuzhen, then she was dead meat.

As long as she even thought about it, Jiang Ning wasn't going to give her a chance at all.

Butler Zhao got up. He could feel the murderous air coming from Jiang Ning. But he knew that Jiang Ning would never let off anyone who could be a threat to Lin Yuzhen's life.

There were some things that were irreversible in this life. Jiang Ning knew this better than anyone else.

"Mr Jiang, I'll go and make some arrangements."

Butler Zhao nodded at Lin Yuzhen and left.

Lin Yuzhen glanced at Jiang Ning and wrinkled her nose.

"Jiang Ning, don't worry, I'll be fine. I'll just ignore that crazy woman."

Jiang Ning shook his head. "You can ignore her, but she will come looking for you. This sort of twisted personality will not listen to reason."

"Stay at Masquerade Club for the next two days. I'll get someone to bring your work over."

"Jiang Niiiiing..."

"Hubby?"

"Hubbbyyyy...won't I become a golden nightingale then?"

Jiang Ning snorted. "Why, are you unwilling to be one?"

"I...of course I'm willing," replied Lin Yuzhen.

Soon enough, Shengcheng's information web reached all corners of the city and located Yang Xiao in a short time.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



Jiang Ning would never allow even the slightest compromise when it came to Lin Yuzhen's safety.

Especially in Tianhai.

This was a place where he was in full control.

Jiang Ning suddenly felt that he had been too kind by not bringing the ruthlessness of war to the city.

"Yang Xiao is conducting an inspection at a factory as a pretext. She has two fighters with her, they're two out of five of the famous tigers of Jianzhou. Mountain Tiger and Hunter Tiger are very powerful fighters."

That was the information from Butler Zhao.

Huang Yuming brought a total of ten wolves and didn't intend to leave anyone behind.

The other party was here to attack Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen. They must not leave behind such hidden dangers.

Jiang Ning sat in the car and narrowed his eyes. "Stop the car!"

"Stop the car?" Huang Yuming was surprised.

"You guys can go surround those two fighters. If you can't fight them, let them go back," replied Jiang Ning. "I'll alight here."

Huang Yuming immediately understood. "Yes Big Boss!"

The car stopped and Jiang Ning hopped out while Huang Yuming and the rest headed for their original destination.

Jiang Ning lit a cigarette and there was a vicious glint in his eyes.

"This crazy woman had better not come asking to get killed!"

He then disappeared without a trace.

Delong Production was one of the businesses that betrayed Lin Group. The moment the boss heard that Yang Xiao was coming to inspect his factory, he became both nervous and excited at the same time.

As long as he could get into Yang Xiao's good books, it was worth it even if he lost the factory in Shengcheng.

He had gotten someone to find out about who Yang Xiao really was and it wasn't difficult to get information.

Yang Luolin had disappeared, so the next heir of the Yang family was probably Yang Xiao. Besides, Yang Xiao herself had a tremendously powerful background too. She was a huge ship!

"Hurry up everyone! Get ready! The person doing the inspection today is a very important person!" Liu Fei shouted loudly. "Whether our factory can expand or not and whether you can get a higher salary will depend on all of you!"

"Make sure she has confidence and believes that our factory can bring her profit. That way she will need us and invest in us, you hear me?"

Liu Fei's voice was very loud through the loudhailer. He had shouted these things several times already and his voice was all hoarse, afraid that his workers might be too stupid to understand what he needed from them.

"CEO Liu, they're here!" his secretary came running in with the news.

Liu Fei instantly jumped off the platform he was standing on and nearly fell.

"Let's go, let's go! Go welcome Young Mistress Yang! Hurry up!"

He ran out with a few of the staff in high positions to welcome Yang Xiao at the door.

Liu Fei immediately ran over to the Hummer at the entrance and bowed slightly as he politely greeted, "Young Mistress Yang!"

The car door opened, but the one who came out wasn't Yang Xiao.

"Miss Yang has already entered your premises," said one of the men who stepped out of the car. "You know what an inspection is? You think we'd give you time to prepare for it?"

Liu Fei was stunned for a while before realizing what happened. She had disguised herself and come to check the factory already!

Many big shots liked to do things like that. Thankfully he had arranged everything beforehand already, so everything should be in order.

"Yes yes, you're right! Young Mistress Yang's thoughts are definitely different from ours, I would never have guessed."

Liu Fei continued to smile awkwardly, "Then both of you..."

"We will be waiting outside. Do what you have to do, operate as usual."

They then got back into the car and locked the doors.

Liu Fei looked a little awkward. They had been rude to him but he didn't dare to say anything. He quickly waved for the men with him to come over.

He whispered, "Miss Yang has already entered our premises! You useless pigs! You mean nobody discovered this?!"

"What? But we didn't see any stranger walk in."

"Exactly - I've already instructed the security guards to let me know the minute anyone comes in."

"What do we do now?"

Liu Fei felt like kicking them. "What else can we do? Go back and check on everything and make sure nothing goes wrong! Don't let Miss Yang notice anything amiss!"

Everyone ran back into the factory nervously like they were about to meet a formidable enemy.

Meanwhile, there were only two men sitting in the Hummer. Their faces were cold and distant and overflowing with murder!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Boss has gone ahead?"

"Yup. She prefers to do it herself."

"What about us?"

"Our enemies have come too."

After he said that, he started up the Hummer, stepped hard on the accelerator and turned to drive off. Two cars were driving towards them and gave chase when they saw the Hummer suddenly start driving off.

"Chase after them!" ordered Huang Yuming.

"How dare you try to be funny with Boss Yuzhen! I, Gou, am going to kill you!"

"And you even dared to say that you want to kill Big Boss!" Number 2 roared.

They were all ready. If they were going to fight that car in front, they were going to wipe them out!

"Big Boss said that if we can win, we fight. If we can't, let them go," said Huang Yuming.

"What? Let them go?!"

Brother Gou didn't understand.

Huang Yuming glared at him. "Our enemy this time is much smarter. She's not here to fight us, don't you get it?"

Brother Gou shook his head.

He was really not gifted in using his brain too much.

"Lure the tiger away from its mountain lair!"

Huang Yuming narrowed his eyes. He was very sure that Yang Xiao wasn't in the car in front, and only those two tigers were inside.

Those two tigers were here just to see how deep Tianhai's waters were.

"Humph, not a bad thing either. Let's see how deep Jianzhou's water is!"

Vroooooom...

The cars accelerated and caught up in no time. The two cars came from both

sides and forced the Hummer to stop.

SWOOSH SWOOSH SWOOSH!

Brother Gou and the wolves immediately rushed out of the cars and surrounded the Hummer without hesitation.

The doors of the Hummer opened and two muscular men stepped out. They had contempt on their faces and clearly had no regard for the men surrounding them.

They looked around them and asked coldly, "Which one of you is Jiang Ning?"

Huang Yuming laughed coldly. "Looking for me?"

There was a vicious glint in the two men's eyes and they didn't bother talking anymore.

"Attack!"

The two men immediately rushed at Huang Yuming. Their first move was fatal already.

"Humph, prepare to die!"

The wolves also made their move. Ten of them worked together like a pack of wolves to stand in front of Huang Yuming and were ready to kill.

A battle immediately ignited.

Meanwhile.

Back at Masquerade Club.

Lin Yuzhen was sitting in the back and stretched herself lazily. She had finally finished looking through all the documents on her desk and could take a break.

"Golden nightingale huh. Stupid Jiang Ning! You can dream on!"

She scoffed. Jiang Ning had actually dared to threaten her into becoming his golden nightingale. She wasn't willing to be one at all.

But Lin Yuzhen knew that Jiang Ning had done this to protect her and ensure her safety, so of course she couldn't refuse him.

"Is it very honorable to be the golden nightingale of a useless man?"

A sinister voice was suddenly heard.

Lin Yuzhen turned around to look. It was Yang Xiao!

She had actually managed to get into Masquerade Club. She was now dressed like a waitress and holding a tray in her hands.

"You...why are you here?"

There was a gleam of madness in Yang Xiao's eyes as she pulled out a dagger from her tray and declared nastily, "I'm here to peel your slutty skin off!"

Lin Yuzhen got a fright when she saw the dagger gleaming in the light.

Was this Yang Xiao nuts?

She had infiltrated Masquerade Club just to kill Lin Yuzhen?

She was really nuts!

"Ah!!" Lin Yuzhen screamed loudly and took a few steps back. But she was too frantic and knocked into the desk.

She knocked the desk over and fell. When she turned to look, Yang Xiao was right in front of her.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"HAHAHA! You've disgraced all the women in the world, so don't blame me for getting nasty!"

Yang Xiao was like a crazy woman now. She held the dagger in her hand and was about to swing it towards Lin Yuzhen's face. Yang Xiao's expression looked terrifying and threatening, and didn't look cold and gorgeous anymore.

She couldn't stand it when men bullied women, but she couldn't stand it even more when a woman had been bullied by a man, but still went along with it and was even willing to be his golden nightingale!

To her, this woman was a slut!

This sort of woman deserved to die! She didn't deserve to live!

Yang Xiao was very agile and quickly caught up with Lin Yuzhen. She lifted the dagger high and the evil and madness on her lips could no longer be hidden.

"Go and die! I'll slash your face to pieces!"

With a vicious glint in her eyes, she drove the dagger downwards.

Lin Yuzhen was on the ground and her face was pale.

She completely blanked out. She couldn't stand up in time and couldn't even think of how to block this attack.

The dagger was going to reach her soon!

But suddenly, a hand appeared and held onto Yang Xiao's arm such that the dagger couldn't move anymore.

"Jiang Ning!"

Lin Yuzhen looked up to see that Jiang Ning was standing in front of her and was looking at Yang Xiao very calmly. "You're a sly one."

Yang Xiao's eyes narrowed. "You didn't fall for it?"

"Someone like you wants to try a trick like luring a tiger away from its mountain lair? You think I would bother to leave this place just to look for you?"

Jiang Ning laughed coldly. "Looks like you're not just mad and not just narcissistic. You're also quite foolish!"

"Humph, so what if you're here? I'll kill you too!"

Yang Xiao used her long legs to kick Jiang Ning and he blocked the attack with his arm. His strong and muscular arm was so hard that Yang Xiao paled and felt that her calves were numb.

She quickly took two steps back, then dashed forward with her dagger again.

Swoosh...

This time, Jiang Ning didn't give her another chance to retreat.

Jiang Ning moved like the wind, and Yang Xiao didn't even see him. She only felt a violent gush of wind suddenly push against her.

Before she could catch herself, Jiang Ning was already in front of her. He used one hand to hold her hair and used the other to slap her hard.

PAK! PAK! PAK!

"Slut! Slut! SLUT!"

Jiang Ning cursed at her while slapping her. Each slap was fiercer than the last, and Yang Xiao's face instantly started swelling up.

PAK! PAK! PAK!

"Crazy woman! Crazy woman! CRAZY WOMAN!!"

Yang Xiao was giddy from the slaps and couldn't fight back at all. She felt like her entire head was vibrating and her ears were ringing.

Jiang Ning wasn't done. He slapped her another ten more times and finally sent her flying.

"You even dare to touch my woman?" Jiang Ning shouted in a cold voice. "Don't think I don't dare to kill you just because you're a woman!"

Yang Xiao was sprawled on the floor with a mouth covered with blood. Her face was so swollen it was beyond recognition.

She coughed several times and trembled all over. Nobody had ever humiliated her like this before.

She had always been the one violating men and humiliating men!

"You..."

Yang Xiao couldn't even stand. Her words were garbled since Jiang Ning had



slapped so many of her teeth out of her mouth.

She had managed to infiltrate Masquerade Club because she was good at disguising herself. If Jiang Ning hadn't noticed something wrong so quickly, things could have gotten worse by now.

"Kill me if you've got guts!"

Yang Xiao was a little hysterical now. "If you dare to kill me, then all the retailers that Lin Group has in the southeast region can all go to hell!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yang Xiao was laughing like a lunatic as she struggled to finally stand. There was no fear on her face at all.

She was a really twisted lunatic!

Lin Yuzhen's expression changed after hearing her words. "What do you mean by that?"

"Hoho, I say, Donghai is forbidden territory and Shengcheng is similarly difficult. You think I dared to come without making some preparations before this?"

Yang Xiao laughed coldly and purposely stared at Jiang Ning. She wanted to see him become anxious but yet did not dare to kill her.

"My men have gotten hold of all the retailers that work with Lin Group. If you dare to kill me, they'll go to hell with me!"

Lin Yuzhen became even more anxious.

Jiang Ning wasn't affected at all.

This woman was very scheming and was much more intelligent than all the illegal circle bosses he had come across before this.

She knew how to read people, how to devise plans and was an extremely scheming person. It was little wonder that she had managed to build such an impressive network in Jianzhou despite being a woman. That wasn't easy to do at all.

"I have underestimated you," Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes. "But did you think this was enough to threaten me?"

"Hahaha, of course this won't threaten you," Yang Xiao laughed. "But what about her? This foolish woman can't stand it if other people die because of her, right?"

Yang Xiao had checked carefully and found out Lin Yuzhen's temperament and personality from those Shengcheng suppliers.

Lin Yuzhen's personality was so easy to make use of, so there was no way Yang Xiao would let this chance go.

Jiang Ning turned and saw that Lin Yuzhen's face was filled with worry and anxiety.

She quickly took her phone out to call all her retail contacts, but nobody picked

up.

"If you let me go, they'll be safe," Yang Xiao was still panting and her mouth was still bleeding. "But if you keep me here, then this woman is going to have nightmares for the rest of her life, because she was the one who caused the death of all those people!"

She was malicious, ruthless and scheming. Yang Xiao was much more formidable compared to Yang Luolin.

If the Yang family chose her to become their heir, their capabilities would rise by another level.

"Jiang Ning," Lin Yuzhen tugged at Jiang Ning's hand. "Those business partners..."

She couldn't just sit here and watch them die!

And they would have died because of her.

Jiang Ning glared at Yang Xiao and knew that she had made all the arrangements before this well so that she could still get out of here alive even if she didn't successfully kill either of them. She was really sly, and she was the only one who really used her brains so far.

And she was a woman too. A mad one.

"So? What are you going to do?" Yang Xiao had a strange smile on her face. Her face was covered with blood and looked fairly frightening. "If you want to kill me, go ahead."

She wasn't afraid to die!

"Zhao!" Jiang Ning shouted. Butler Zhao immediately brought some men in.

"Drag her to the border and exchange her for all our business partners. If we're short of even one person, then her life remains in Shengcheng!"

"Got it!"

Yang Xiao laughed. She laughed gleefully.

She didn't manage to kill Jiang Ning nor Lin Yuzhen, but she laughed because she felt like she had won.

She really wanted to laugh when she saw how kindly Lin Yuzhen looked.

"In this world, it's only correct for everyone to fight for themselves. Kindness? That's a joke, you hear me?"

She threw Lin Yuzhen a glance, then left while laughing loudly. She was so arrogant.

Meanwhile, Huang Yuming's side was getting more and more intense.

Ten of them were attacking the two in the middle. Every punch they made hit the men, and they were as ferocious as they could be.

BAM!

Brother Gou violently threw one of them a punch and they both moved back. Both sides stood across from each other and nobody moved.

But Huang Yuming could tell that the other side had not used their maximum strength yet.

One of them received a text message. After reading it, he narrowed his eyes and said, "Today we won't kill you. Next time we'll make sure all of you are dead!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The two of them slowly moved back and then turned to leave.

"Trying to escape?" Brother Gou roared and wanted to dash over.

Suddenly, Mountain Tiger laughed coldly and pulled his jacket open to reveal a time bomb that was slowly counting down.

Brother Gou's expression immediately changed, while Huang Yuming quickly said, "Let them go!"

These two were crazy!

"You guys better be prepared, the next time we see you, you're all going to die!"

Mountain Tiger got in with Hunter Tiger and they left.

Huang Yuming waved his hand. "Follow them!"

These two were too dangerous. Moreover, they were insane and didn't know their limit at all.

He had to make sure that these two men left the city and not re-enter Shengcheng. Otherwise he would have to block these two men no matter what it took.

Were all the people in Jianzhou's illegal circle like that?

The Hummer didn't enter Shengcheng again. It headed for the highway and stopped right at the border.

There was one car already parked at the border marker. There were three men standing next to that car, and their presence felt identical to Mountain Tiger and Hunter Tiger.

The five tigers of Jianzhou!

They were all here!

Huang Yuming and the rest got out of their cars and remained on one side of the border marker as they kept themselves alert. They didn't think that all five tigers of Jianzhou would be here.

This wasn't a simple sounding out of Shengcheng after all!

Beep beep!

Another car came, and Huang Yuming immediately recognized that car as

Jiang Ning's car, and he was surprised.

After the car came to a stop, Jiang Ning got out and had Yang Xiao in his hands. Her face was still covered with blood.

But there was no fear and anger on her face. There was only madness and glee.

When the five tigers saw that Yang Xiao had been beaten to this state, their expressions darkened.

"You're asking for it!"

Mountain Tiger wanted to make a move, but Hunter Tiger shook his head.

"Where are they?"

Jiang Ning didn't bother with too many unnecessary words. He glanced at the five tigers and there was no fear in his eyes. If he had to fight them, he could still kill them all even if there were fifty of them.

The tigers opened the door of their car and five or six people were pulled out from the car. They were all the representatives that Lin Group had in the southeast region.

All of them were blindfolded and their faces were filled with terror.

"Exchange."

Hunter Tiger stared at Jiang Ning. His eyes looked like a poisonous snake.

Jiang Ning pushed Yang Xiao over. Hunter Tiger nodded and released the representatives. Both side exchanged at the same time.

"Take them away." Jiang Ning gave orders and a few men came up to lead the representatives away, while the rest continued to be on high alert as they stared at Yang Xiao and her gang.

The ropes around Yang Xiao's hands were untied and there were bloodied rope burns on her hands. She didn't feel the pain, and looked more like she was enjoying it.

This crazy woman was really out of her mind!

"I've actually failed."

Yang Xiao smiled. Her face was very swollen from Jiang Ning's slaps earlier

and looked very frightening now.

"But it's a pity that you don't dare to kill me either."

She looked straight at Jiang Ning, "The water in Tianhai is really deep. Interesting, very interesting."

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes. Huang Yuming immediately walked up and whispered something to Jiang Ning.

"Very interesting indeed."

Jiang Ning looked at Mountain Tiger, then looked at the other tigers. The five tigers of Jianzhou were the toughest fighters in Jianzhou's illegal circle. If five of them joined hands, they were even more powerful than Broken Sword.

They had all come today just to receive Yang Xiao.

Yang Xiao had really planned this all well. Even if she couldn't kill the people she wanted to, she had already thought of an exit route for herself.

The waters of Tianhai's illegal circle were deep, but the waters of Jianzhou's illegal circle were equally deep.

"Jiang Ning, the next time I see you, I'm going to chop your head off!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yang Xiao wiped away the blood on her lips and laughed loudly, as if she had gone mad.

She then got into her car as the five tigers looked warily at Jiang Ning. Then they all got into their cars and drove off.

"Big Boss, why didn't you fight them?" Brother Gou couldn't help but ask.

Jiang Ning could definitely take them down without a problem. Besides, Brother Gou and some brothers were also around. Even if they had to die, Brother Gou didn't want to let these bastards off.

"No hurry," replied Jiang Ning. "It's not time yet."

He wasn't afraid of the time bomb on Mountain Tiger. If he really wanted to make a move, Mountain Tiger wouldn't even get the chance to trigger it.

But it was not time yet.

Jiang Ning turned to look at Brother Gou and the rest. "So, after fighting with two of the tigers, do you think you are confident of killing them?"

Brother Gou's face turned slightly red.

The ten of them had joined hands and were at the same level as them. And the two tigers hadn't even unleashed their maximum prowess yet. If they really fought with everything they had, they could probably kill one and severely injure another. But ten of them would definitely suffer a lot of casualties and even death.

"I didn't kill them because these five tigers will be your grindstone," Jiang Ning said calmly. "After killing them, all of you would be truly considered fighters."

Brother Gou and the rest immediately started getting excited.

Jiang Ning had left these bastards alive for them to kill?

"You are to become the most ferocious pack of wolves. If any of you do not succeed, then that is my failure."

Jiang Ning eyed all of them. "And I have never failed!"

"Yes Big Boss!" everyone shouted in unison.

If they didn't develop themselves further, then it would be hard to go up north. The illegal circle of Jianzhou in the southeast region was only a small part of the plan.



They were going to conquer this area and use this small part as a grindstone for the wolves, so that they would be good enough for the next level.

Fei was all ready in the north. The Luo family was a weakness that could already be exploited even further.

Once Jiang Ning's plan to move up north succeeded and they set foot into the north, that would be the time when they had to shake up the entire area!

"It's time I taught you guys how to do formations," said Jiang Ning.

Everyone soon left the place. Brother Gou and the other brothers went back to Donghai, called all the wolves together and continued training at the facility while waiting for Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning went to Masquerade Club.

Lin Yuzhen was still worried and she blamed herself for what happened.

She breathed a sigh of relief when she saw that all the representatives were safe.

"Hubby, thank you."

Lin Yuzhen pulled at Jiang Ning's hand. "Am I very useless?"

She suddenly felt that she was really quite weak. Compared to that madwoman, Yang Xiao, Lin Yuzhen was neither imposing nor domineering.

"Nonsense," Jiang Ning gently pinched her nose. "You're the most outstanding wife in the world, who says you're useless?"

He couldn't find another woman in the world who could make him listen to her.

"That woman said..."

"Don't be affected by what that crazy woman said. One should not be kind because you want something in return, but because that's the right thing to do."

Lin Yuzhen nodded.

How good or bad the society was didn't depend on how many evildoers there were, but on how many continued to choose kindness even in the face of evil.


Jiang Ning was very clear on this point. He was even more assured that even if the entire world was dark, then Lin Yuzhen was that bright spot in the darkness.

It was a bright spot that could chase the darkness away and bring more light to others.

So Jiang Ning was going to put in his best efforts to protect Lin Yuzhen and to protect her pure and innocent personality.

Jiang Ning took Lin Yuzhen's hands in his and said, "Besides, it's not that evildoers don't get punished. It's just not time yet!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jianzhou.

Yang Xiao was back.

PIANG!

The glass of water on the table was smashed to pieces.

The full length mirror had also been kicked by her and it lay in fragments all over the floor.

The face reflected in the mirror shards made her look distorted. She couldn't believe that Jiang Ning had slapped her so hard that she looked like that now!

The doctors standing on one side of the room were very nervous. Their throats were dry and none of them dared to speak.

"Jiang Ning! I'm going to chop you into pieces!" Yang Xiao shrieked.

"All of you can leave first. Get some medicine together so that Boss can recover as quickly as possible."

"Yes, Mr Yan."

Yan Chong was standing by the side and his expression was equally nasty.

Yan Chong was undoubtedly the leader of Jianzhou's illegal circle. To other people, he was king over Jianzhou's illegal circle. But he knew that without Yang Xiao, he was nothing.

"Boss, I'll bring men over and kill Jiang Ning!"

Yang Xiao spun around violently and walked up to Yan Chong in just two steps. She grabbed his collar and snapped at him, "Do you think he's so easy to kill?"

"And if you're talking about killing him, I'm going to kill him myself!"

Yan Chong didn't move. He just frowned slightly. "But you're hurt."

"This is just a small injury," Yang Xiao laughed coldly. "Did you think Jiang Ning really couldn't kill me this time?"

She knew that her threat meant nothing to Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning wouldn't care about those business partners. The only one he cared about was Lin Yuzhen!

Yang Xiao's expression became even more murderous when she thought about Lin Yuzhen.

If she couldn't kill Jiang Ning, then she had to kill Lin Yuzhen.

She refused to allow any woman to be so weak and so kind. She wanted Lin Yuzhen to be vicious! She wanted every woman to be just like her, ferocious and ruthless!

"The waters in Tianhai are very deep. I got someone to check, no news from the north yet."

Yan Chong straightened his collar. "Boss, without sufficient information, I think we ought to be a little more cautious."

It wasn't easy to gain control over Shengcheng's illegal circle. Without support from the north, even Yang Xiao would be unable to do it.

When a ship got bigger and bigger, it became harder and harder to make a turn, never mind a U turn.

What they could do now was to steadily move forward in a straight line so that others wouldn't be able to squeeze it out of the way.

Lin Group was going to make its way into the southeast area, so all the people from Donghai's illegal circle were definitely coming in too.

Yang Xiao didn't care. She looked coldly at Yan Chong, "Just do what you're supposed to do, I don't need you to interfere with my plans."

She sat down in front of the dresser and looked at herself in the mirror. She reached a hand out to gently caress the imprint on her face. The pain on her face was stinging, but it also brought about a strange ecstasy.

Yang Xiao suddenly felt like she was enjoying this moment.

She recalled how Jiang Ning had slapped her so hard and she unconsciously crossed her two legs and started squirming.

Yan Chong noticed her actions and didn't say anything. He politely excused himself.

"Jiang Ning...how do you want to die?"

After a while, Yang Xiao's face was slightly red. Her breathing had quickened slightly and her gaze was faraway.

She pulled the drawer open and was about to take one of the medicine bottles inside when her phone suddenly rang.

Yang Xiao's gaze immediately became alert again. She looked at her phone and picked up the call in annoyance.

"What do you want now?"

It was a call from Yang Huang. Besides Yang Huang, Yang Xiao refused to pick up calls from anybody else in the Yang family.


"I told you to check on where Yang Luolin is. Why haven't you given me an answer yet? Where is your brother?"


Yang Huang was getting anxious.

He knew that his daughter was very good at such things and she would definitely be able to track him down. But it had been so long and she hadn't given him an answer yet. His father was asking about Yang Luolin very anxiously and had chased him for an answer several times already.

"Yang Luolin? Yup I found him."

Yang Xiao laughed and there was a gleam in her eye. "Tell you what, I'll talk to you guys when I get home."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I haven't gone back to see that old man in a long time. Just nice, I've got a present for him."

Yang Huang didn't like it when Yang Xiao talked like that. He warned her, "If you're coming home, that's good. But don't spout nonsense when you're home, got it?"

PAK!

Yang Xiao hung up.

She took a bath and changed her clothes, as if she didn't care about the injuries on her face anymore. Then she headed straight for the Yang house.

The old manor of the Yang family was several decades old now.

When the first generation became successful, they built a small estate that covered more than 10,000 square feet.

When it reached Yang Huang's generation, the family advanced even further, especially since Yang Xiao had also helped her father quite a bit along the way.

Yang Dong was seated in the main hall of the house. He was rather anxious, but he was more angry.

"Tsk, she wants to give me a present?" He scoffed. "Since when was this granddaughter of mine so filial?"

"Dad, she's rarely so filial, so don't be angry anymore," Yang Huang said with a smile. "Besides, she said she's found Luolin, so you can relax."

Yang Dong nodded after hearing these words.

He was most concerned about Yang Luolin. As for how Yang Xiao was and whether she was giving him anything or not didn't matter to him at all.

As long as Yang Luolin was found and he was alright, that was enough for the old man.

Beep beep!

When Yang Huang heard the honking sound outside, he knew Yang Xiao had arrived.

He was about to walk out when Yang Dong snorted. "What are you doing? Your daughter has come home and she wants her father to welcome her? What nonsense is this! Sit down!"

Yang Huang dared not go against his father's wishes.

Even though he was officially the head of the Yang family now and was a big shot in public, in reality, Yang Dong continued to control everything in the family. The one with the final say in the family was still Yang Dong.

"Ok." Yang Huang sat down and didn't move.

After a while, Yang Xiao sauntered in. The way she walked made Yang Dong fairly unhappy.

Which girl walked like this?!

How atrocious!

He pounded his walking stick on the floor and was about to start yelling at her when he suddenly noticed how swollen and wounded Yang Xiao's face was.

"What happened?" Yang Huang spoke up first. He was so shocked by the injuries on Yang Xiao's face. He asked angrily, "Who hit you?!"

"Who dared to hit my daughter! You're a daughter of the Yang family!"

"Hoho, some people don't care that I'm a daughter of the Yang family." Yang Xiao glanced disdainfully at Yang Dong and said, "Besides, what are daughters of the Yang family worth?"

Yang Huang didn't say anything. He knew that Yang Xiao had been angry about this all her life.

Yang Dong's expression immediately darkened.

This granddaughter was an embarrassment to his family!

"If you think it's embarrassing to be a Yang, then you can change your surname too!" Yang Dong snapped nastily.

"I wish I could too." Yang Xiao pulled a chair over and crossed her legs like a man. "But I thought it through carefully. If I change my surname, then who would inherit this huge family business?"

"You want to inherit the Yang family?" Yang Dong's expression changed, then he laughed coldly. "Dream on!"

"The Yang family business will never be inherited by a woman like you. So forget about it!"

He was getting angry and his face started turning red. He knew that this granddaughter of his was up to no good.

How dare she covet the Yang family business!

He really had to find a way to chase her out to reduce trouble for himself.

"Oh really?" Yang Xiao laughed and looked mischievously at Yang Dong. "But what if Yang Luolin's dead?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



The air was suddenly frozen.

Yang Dong and Yang Huang's expressions were frozen, as if they didn't hear what Yang Xiao just said.

"What...what did you say?" Yang Huang managed to react first. His expression changed and he asked anxiously, "What did you say? What happened to Luolin? What happened to him?"

"He's dead."

Yang Xiao said it very casually.

It was as if some stray dog or cat just died.

"You said Yang Luolin is dead?!"

Yang Dong suddenly stood up and nearly collapsed. He quickly held onto his walking stick as his face turned all red and he stared straight at Yang Xiao.

"That's right. Yang Luolin is dead." Yang Xiao continued to remain calm as she looked at Yang Dong a little cheekily. "He died in Tianhai. Apparently he offended the illegal circle and died really terribly."

"Apparently he's been turned into fertilizer."

BOOOM.

Yang Dong was completely stunned, as if he had just been struck by lightning. He couldn't believe it at all.

Yang Huang was also taken aback and his face was filled with disbelief.

Surely Yang Xiao said this just to anger her grandfather, right?

This couldn't be true!

"Yang Xiao!" Yang Huang became furious and started shouting, "Don't spout nonsense!"

"I'm not spouting nonsense," Yang Xiao tilted her head and laughed coldly. "You can send someone to check and you'd find out for yourself."

Yang Huang's breathing quickened and he didn't know how to react to this.

It never crossed his mind that Yang Luolin would die.

The heir of the Yang family had just died at the hands of others!

"Go and check!" Yang Dong pounded the walking stick hard and started coughing violently as he was both worried and anxious. "Yang Huang, go and confirm this right now!!"

Yang Huang immediately ran out.

"Did you...did you already know a long time ago?" Yang Dong glared at Yang Xiao. He was so angry that his back was heaving.

"I just found out," Yang Xiao happily picked up a grape from the table and stuffed one into her mouth after peeling it. "Look, didn't I come to tell you the minute I found out?"

She suddenly laughed coldly. She was so happy about this.

"Why, how do you feel now that your son is dead?"

Yang Dong suddenly felt a ringing in his head and he collapsed back onto his chair. He looked in horror at Yang Xiao. He didn't expect Yang Xiao to know about this.

"You..."

"You're wondering how I know?" Yang Xiao replied. "You thought your plan was seamless? Too bad, that mother of mine doesn't have very tight lips. After beating her up, she spilled all the beans."

"You're the one who killed her?" Yang Dong's voice was trembling.

"She wasn't a faithful wife, so you mean she doesn't deserve to die? She's a disgrace to me!" Yang Xiao spat out disdainfully.

Yang Dong's paled in an instant.

He was very controlling over the Yang family, so even though he was getting on in age, he refused to give up authority over the family. Even though Yang Huang was the head of the family now, Yang Huang had to listen to everything Yang Dong said.

Yang Dong only wanted his own son to be the heir to the family even.

So he got a brother for Yang Huang, and this brother was born through Yang Huang's own wife.

Nobody knew about this, but Yang Xiao had actually beaten her mother so

badly that her mother confessed to this.

"You're really a crazy woman! You're nuts!" Yang Dong bellowed.

Yang Xiao just laughed and wasn't bothered. She even treated this as a compliment.

She was in a good mood after seeing how frustrated and furious Yang Dong became.

"You really want to kill me now, don't you? Too bad, you've lost your chance. If you had killed me when I was a child, you would be living in peace now." Yang Xiao got up. "You'd better behave yourself, otherwise if I tell my dad about this, I don't know how long he'll let you stick around."

"You..."

Yang Dong pointed a finger at Yang Xiao. He was so angry that he started coughing and his back was heaving.

But Yang Xiao couldn't be bothered with him. She waved and left while laughing merrily.

She hadn't come home for nothing since she could make Yang Dong so angry.

As for how the Yang family was going to take revenge on that man in Donghai, that had nothing to do with her.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

She only hoped that Jiang Ning wouldn't die so soon. She still wanted to have some fun with him.

Yang Dong sat in the main hall and his chest heaved unsteadily. So many things suddenly happened and his heart was in a mess.

He hadn't been afraid of making a cuckold of his own son when he was younger. So what if Yang Huang found out about it? What could he have done?

But now he was old, and Yang Huang had become more and more powerful as the head of the family!

If Yang Huang found out about this, Yang Huang might kill him!

Yang Xiao was really vicious!

This woman was really way too vicious!

"Dad!"

Yang Huang came running back and his expression was very nasty. He clenched his fists tightly and his eyes were filled with anger and sadness. "Luolin...he's gone!"

Yang Dong's walking stick fell to the floor.

He opened his mouth and barely managed to speak. "He...he's really dead?"

Yang Huang nodded.

He had just checked with someone with very good information sources. He confirmed that Yang Luolin was already dead and had died in Tianhai, just like what Yang Xiao said.

"And his body?"

Yang Huang shook his head.

His body had probably been turned into fertilizer just like what Yang Xiao said.

Who on earth did he offend?

BAM!

Yang Dong pushed the table over. He was like a lion that had gone mad and his eyes were going to pop out of their sockets.

"DAMN IT! DAMN IT!"

"Who killed Luolin?! WHO KILLED HIM?!"

Yang Dong started roaring. "Find out who killed him! I'm going to make sure he doesn't get a proper burial! I want them ALL DEAD!!"

He shouted hysterically as if he had gone mad. He was so angry that he nearly went bonkers. He couldn't catch his breath and started coughing violently.

COUGH COUGH!

"Dad!"

"I...I want them all dead!!"

Yang Dong was so angry that he fainted and collapsed onto the floor with a thud.

.....

Meanwhile,

Donghai.

At the training facility.

Brother Gou and the rest had arrived.

After fighting with two of the tigers, they knew very well that they weren't up to standard.

They wanted to protect Donghai and wanted to follow Jiang Ning, but they weren't strong enough!

It wasn't because they weren't hardworking enough or they hadn't put in enough effort.

It wasn't because their constitution was too poor either. It was purely because the time given was very short.

The fact that they had managed to become so strong in such a short time was already shocking. Nobody would have believed it if they hadn't witnessed their growth for themselves.

This sort of magical transformation actually really existed.

And now, they had to become even stronger!

Jiang Ning stood in front of them and nodded slightly after glancing at all of them.

"Your constitution isn't the best, but you have done a good job already."

He spoke in a loud voice, "But as a human, everyone would definitely have some weakness. Your ability may reach a bottleneck and you might find it hard to breakthrough. Some people are very swift, but poor at attacking. Some are good at defending, but move too slowly. And there are some who are good at attacking, but terrible at defence."

Brother Gou and the wolves listened attentively to everything Jiang Ning said. Every word he said was important to them.

"Right now, none of you can depend on yourselves to be all rounded."

Jiang Ning declared, "So now, I'm going to teach you how to attack in a formation!"

Everyone's eyes lit up at these words. They knew that nothing Jiang Ning taught them was bad.

They were willing to do anything in order to increase their fighting ability.

"You will learn to attack in a group, coordinate with one another, help one another, cover each other's weakness. You will increase your power by more than double!"

Jiang Ning's voice seemed to have a strange power about it. It made everyone's blood start rushing through their bodies.

"All of you are wolves, you're a pack of wolves! You can only defeat everyone else when you're united and well coordinated, understand?"

"Got it!" everyone shouted back in unison.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning knew that these wolves didn't have a very good constitution for this in the first place. He couldn't even consider them just ok.

The wolves knew this even better themselves.

But they were willing to put in their heart and soul!

They were willing to train with their life!

As long as Jiang Ning gave the order, they would go all out.

They were like troops in battle and only listened to orders from the commander-in-chief. As long as Jiang Ning said so, they would do it without hesitation.

Everyone had their strengths and weaknesses, so it was very tough to become a highly skilled fighter who could both attack and defend.

This needed hard work, and one needed to be built for it!

Most people weren't built for it, so there was a maximum to how good they became.

But their Big Boss was Jiang Ning!

The God of War who could do anything!

"Listen carefully to what I'm about to say. This is an opportunity for all of you to transform," said Jiang Ning sternly. "This formation can be used by all of you to attack in groups, but it can also help you to find what sort of martial arts you can develop."

Everyone couldn't hide the excitement on their faces.

A martial arts that they could develop!

That could help them to become like Broken Sword, or like the five tigers of Jianzhou, and they could walk their own path.

Everyone focused and didn't dare to be distracted at all.

They remembered every word and action that came from Jiang Ning, and kept replaying all these things in their minds.

Jiang Ning took two whole hours to talk to them and even personally trained with them, coached them and helped them to understand as quickly as possible.

Huang Yuming was standing by the side and his expression was very stern. The admiration in his eyes kept growing.

"Big Boss is really Big Boss," he couldn't help but exclaim to himself.

Jiang Ning had sent him to the north to help Fei complete his mission. In this short period of time, Huang Yuming had undergone a transformation.

After he had seen that world, he realized that he was just a frog in the well before this!

His world was too narrow and his vision was limited.

He had only touched the tip of the iceberg, but he had found out a little more about Jiang Ning's life. Huang Yuming was completely floored by what he found out, and his worship of Jiang Ning came from deep within his bones and from his very heart.

His entire soul was sold to Jiang Ning.

"Gou, you guys probably don't know how many people wish Big Boss could train them like this, and they'd do anything for this sort of training. But too bad, they won't get a chance."

Huang Yuming took a deep breath and suddenly envied the wolves.

He didn't know any martial arts, so he couldn't fight alongside Jiang Ning on the ground. But he was intelligent, so he could be Jiang Ning's strategist and be his left and right arms!

The wolves spent the entire afternoon focusing on understanding what Jiang Ning had taught them. Jiang Ning left after the sun went down, but they didn't stop.

The training facility was filled with their roars and shouts.

Even the factory far away could hear them.

"Mr Xu, what are they doing?"

Chen Yu had gotten used to the operations here. She reformed many things in a short time and increased the productivity of the factory by a lot.

Mr Xu was filled with admiration for her, and worked hard with Chen Yu.

"Brother Gou and the rest? Apparently they're working out," Mr Xu laughed. "They need strong bodies in order to protect us. They're Donghai's guardian



angels.”

Guardian angels?

Chen Yu immediately thought of Jiang Ning. Perhaps Jiang Ning was the real guardian angel of Donghai.

.....

Meanwhile.

At the Yang house in Jianzhou.

The atmosphere in the house was very tense.

Nobody dared to speak too loudly and dared not even make noise while walking, afraid of incurring the wrath of the head of the household. Yang Huang was already furious.

Yang Huang's expression was very dark and storm clouds were brewing.

Yang Dong was seated at the front and he had no expression on his face. But his eyes were spewing fire and murder!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Kill them all! Kill them all!!" Yang Dong suddenly shouted and his voice was trembling. "Send all our fighters to Donghai! Kill Jiang Ning and destroy Lin Group!"

Yang Huang's expression was still dark. "We have no proof."

"What proof do you want?!" Yang Dong was furious. "Smash all the retailers carrying anything from Lin Group! Send all our fighters to Donghai and kill them all! This is an order!"

"Got it!"

Yang Huang nodded.

The instructions went out quickly. But all the retailers that Lin Group had in the southeast region had all been cleared out beforehand. So the men went there only to find that the shops were empty and there was nothing left.

This made Yang Huang so angry that even his bones were chattering.

He wanted to vent his anger but there was nowhere to vent it.

The Yang family kept eighteen highly skilled fighters under their wing. Yang Luolin had taken two with him, so there were sixteen of them left.

Yang Dong leaned on his walking stick and stared hard at the sixteen of them.

"I don't care how you do it! Kill Jiang Ning! Kill all the Lins!"

"You'll be rewarded \$10 million for killing Jiang Ning!"

"You'll be rewarded \$10 million for each member of the Lin family you kill!"

Yang Dong roared, "Heard me?!"

"Yes, Old Master Yang!"

All sixteen of them immediately went out from there. This reward alone was worth risking their lives for.

"Where's Yang Xiao?" Yang Dong turned coldly to Yang Huang and said, "Her brother has been killed, and she doesn't want to help to take revenge?"

Yang Xiao was even more powerful. She had a very powerful network in Jianzhou's illegal circle.

Especially those tigers under Yan Chong.

"I can't contact her," Yang Huang shook his head.

He knew that Yang Xiao wouldn't bother helping, since she didn't care about Yang Luolin dying. Besides, she was after the Yang family assets. Since Yang Dong didn't want to give it to her, there was no way she was going to help.

Yang Dong could dream on.

"Humph! Unfilial children! All of you are unfilial!"

There was a cold glint in Yang Dong's eyes. After he had settled Jiang Ning and the Lin family, he had to get rid of Yang Xiao too.

She knew about him and Yang Luolin. Once this was exposed, then his position as the real head of the family was in danger.

If he could live for another decade, then he was going to stay in control of the Yang family for another decade!

Yang Huang's expression became sinister after Yang Dong left.

He clenched his fists tightly, then opened them again violently. He pulled his phone out from his pocket. There was a text message from Yang Xiao.

When he read the contents of the message, he felt like he had been struck by lightning.

That sort of humiliation and shame gave him an urge to kill somebody!

"Dad, you're really my wonderful father!"

He watched Yang Dong leave and his teeth started chattering from anger.

He never thought that the one who would humiliate him so badly would be his own father. Perhaps he should take up Yang Xiao's suggestion. He and his daughter were the ones who could really take control of the Yang family!

All sixteen fighters went to Donghai, and Yang Dong didn't doubt their ability at all.

All of them were rather famous in the martial arts world, and some of them had masters or belonged to sects that were also well ranked in the martial arts world.

The Yang family had relied on them to help them take assets and resources away from others by force all these years.

So what was killing one Jiang Ning and the Lin family to them?

But after three days had passed, none of them came back. In fact, there wasn't even news from them.

After they had left Jianzhou and headed for Donghai, they had disappeared into thin air.

They were like rocks that sank to the bottom of the ocean!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

BAM!

Yang Dong was furious.

He slammed a palm hard on the table.

"What's going on?!" he roared. "Where are they? Why didn't a single one come back? Where are they?!"

"I'm afraid they're all dead." Yang Huang looked as grim as ever, but there was a little glee in his voice.

"All dead?" Yang Dong's lips trembled.

These fighters were all men that the Yang family spent a lot of money grooming and taking care of. They had spent so much on them every year.

They had never failed to complete any mission given to them by the Yang family. How did they all die this time?

This was a terrible loss!

The Yang family wanted to take revenge on the Lins and wanted to destroy the Lin Group retailers in Jianzhou, but they had all cleared out so the Yang family couldn't even vent their anger.

They had sent men towards Donghai directly, but there was no word from them at all.

Those were the sixteen highly skilled fighters that belonged to the Yang family!

"It's been too great a loss for the Yang family," said Yang Huang. "Dad, we can't possibly ignore the Yang family's future development just because Yang Luolin is dead."

His tone of voice was rather distant and even sounded a little angry.

Yang Dong turned and stared at Yang Huang. "What did you say?"

"That's your son! Since he's been killed, don't you want to take revenge for him?"

Yang Huang didn't say anything, but he laughed coldly in his heart.

His son?

Yang Luolin was actually his brother, and Yang Huang didn't want to

acknowledge that at all!

"We have to take revenge since he was killed, but we can't let the family continue to suffer losses because of this," Yang Hung shook his head. "If these sixteen have really perished in Donghai, then it's really a huge loss to us. If the heir is dead, we can just change the heir. But once these fighters are dead, it's hard to find new ones to groom and train all over again."

Yang Dong's face started getting red from anger.

What did Yang Huang mean by that? Just change the heir?

"What do you mean by just change the heir? Who can we change it to?" Yang Dong roared. "You want me to switch you out from being the head of the family too?"

Yang Huang was angry too but he just clenched his teeth. "If you think you need to change me out, then go ahead! You have the last say in this family anyway!"

Yang Dong trembled a little when he heard this.

He looked straight at Yang Huang and he had a bad feeling.

His son had always been very obedient. Even though he was very imposing outside the house, he always listened to everything Yang Dong said when they were at home. Today, he had actually argued back?

Did Yang Huang already know?

Yang Dong immediately forced himself to calm down. He could control the Yang family for so many years, so clearly he wasn't an idiot.

He guessed that Yang Huang probably knew about it. That madwoman had told him anyway.

"Luolin is dead, so who will inherit the future of the Yang family?"

"The Yang family doesn't only have Yang Luolin. As long as this person is a Yang and has the ability to bring the family to the next level, then changing the heir isn't necessarily a bad thing."

Yang Huang continued coldly, "I've always felt that Yang Xiao is a good choice."

"Nonsense!" Yang Dong raged. "Can she even be considered a Yang family member?!"

"Then you think you find another one?"

Yang Huang's words were dripping with sarcasm. "Or you want to take the opportunity to get me another brother while you're still able to? You need a daughter-in-law to help you?"

This was as good as falling out with his father.

Yang Dong almost collapsed. He leaned against a table in time to keep himself from falling.

He looked at Yang Huang and his breathing quickened slightly.

After a while, he slowly said, "I did that for the sake of the family!"

"Hoho, oh really now? For the sake of the family? And now?" Yang Huang stood up against his father for the first time. "Are you going to do it again for the sake of the family?!"

"What?! How dare you question what I do?!" Yang Dong narrowed his eyes and had a malicious look on his face. "In this family, I, Yang Dong, calls the shots!"

As long as he wanted to, he could change the head of the family anytime!

Yang Huang didn't say anymore. He took a few deep breaths and calmed down.

"Then you can decide."

"You want to avenge Yang Luolin, so you can continue sending people to Donghai and to attack Lin Group. You have the final say in everything the Yang family does."

He then turned and left without even looking back.

Yang Dong was so angry that his body was trembling, but he could only pound his walking stick and shout at him, "Unfilial child! All of you are unfilial children!"

"Does he really think I can't handle this Lin family?"

He scoffed, "If I get serious, nobody will survive!"

There were plenty of other resources that he could use. What was Lin Group to him? So what if his sixteen fighters were dead? Did Yang Huang really think that Yang Dong didn't have any other tricks up his sleeve?

Yang Dong could tell that Yang Huang had turned on him. Yang Huang was

going to stand on the same side as Yang Xiao and take the Yang family assets away from him.

They could dream on!

This father and daughter could dream on!

As long as he was still alive, Yang Xiao could forget about taking a single cent from the Yang family.

Yang Dong soon reached a decision. He was going to be vicious and decisive and stop beating round the bush. Since the fighters his family groomed weren't good enough, then he was going to spend money to hire someone else. He wanted a killer, so he was going to get a professional killer to do the job.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



Meanwhile.

Donghai.

Sixteen men were kneeling in a row on the floor. Their arms were all broken and they were all tied up, so there was no chance for them to escape at all.

Jiang Ning sat in front of them and glanced at them. "Not bad, you guys have guts. You actually came to Donghai to kill me."

"Did you overestimate yourselves? Or did you look down on them?"

He pointed to the wolves standing to one side.

After they had practiced their new formation techniques, they were whining about how they had no enemies to practice on. And then some people actually came knocking on their door.

The moment they got a chance, the wolves all went crazy!

This formation technique could help them to increase their strengths and completely hide their weaknesses.

They became shockingly powerful.

They might not stand a chance if they had to fight these fighters one on one, but once they surrounded them and used their formation technique, fighting these fighters was easy peasy and wasn't a problem at all.

"Humph, since we're in your hands, then you can go ahead and kill us or torture us, up to you!" One of them was still very obstinate and laughed coldly, "Since you've offended the Yang family, then you're definitely doomed!"

BAM!

Brother Gou didn't have so much patience. He aimed a punch at that man's head.

That man's head exploded like a watermelon.

"How dare you be so rude to Big Boss! You're asking for it!"

The rest of the men paled.

They didn't expect Donghai to be this frightening. Donghai was known to be forbidden territory, and after what they went through, they understood how frightening the words 'forbidden territory' were.

Before they had made their move, they were already discovered the minute they stepped into Donghai.

It had been less than an hour since they were surrounded and ended up here with broken arms and kneeling before Jiang Ning.

It was too terrifying!

It was impossible to kill someone like Jiang Ning in such a city. Unfortunately, the Old Master of the Yang family had no idea.

"The Yang family," Jiang Ning laughed as if he just heard a joke. "I'm hoping the Yangs will send more highly skilled fighters. Hopefully they won't be useless punching bags like you guys."

"These brothers of mine still need more grindstones. If the Yang family doesn't come this way, then we'll have to pay them a visit."

The remaining fifteen of them were now shocked and terrified.

Jiang Ning was arrogant to this extent! He didn't have any regard for the Yang family and even treated them as grindstones for his men.

He actually dared to go to Jianzhou?

He was going to kill his way through the Yang family's territory?

Jiang Ning was seriously arrogant.

They had never seen anyone this audacious. He wanted to kill his way in Jianzhou and look for the Yang family.

He was going to die for sure!

"Aren't you ashamed of saying such boastful words?" someone finally shouted out. "Jianzhou isn't a place where people like you can go to!"

"Oh really." Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes. "I will go, but none of you will get to see it."

He then ignored all these ants and left.

Huang Yuming walked out with Jiang Ning and used his hand to slash through the air. The wolves immediately understood what that hand sign meant.

Huang Yuming followed behind Jiang Ning to wait for new orders from Jiang Ning.

He knew that Jiang Ning was thinking.

"Tell Zhao to expand his information network as wide as possible. Especially Donghai – increase the security level by one. I'm guessing someone is going to come in soon.

"Got it."

Huang Yuming nodded and quickly got it done.

The Yang family in Jianzhou didn't have that many people they could use. These sixteen men was probably the best fighters the family had. But too bad for them, they were merely ants to Jiang Ning.

If the Yang family failed this time, they would have other plans for sure. Jiang Ning was particularly wary of that crazy woman, Yang Xiao. Who knew how twisted this woman's psyche was?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning didn't think too much anymore. The Yang family was now bent on killing him.

Things were going to get fun. He hadn't moved his arms and legs in a while, so it was good to warmup.

The security of Donghai went up by one level, so any new faces that entered Donghai would be watched carefully. It wasn't easy to make trouble in Donghai.

This was going to be a test of how secure this so called forbidden territory was. Jiang Ning was using himself as bait, but he didn't care.

He was very relaxed about it.

Lin Yuzhen was busy in the office, while Jiang Ning sat on the sofa drinking his tea and eating his snacks. He was having such a leisurely time.

He had promised Lin Yuzhen to take her to the hot spring after she was done with her work. So could only wait for her and didn't go anywhere else.

Mean while.

Jianzhou, at Yang Xiao's bungalow.

Yang Xiao couldn't stop laughing coldly when she heard what Yang Huang told her.

"This old fogey is really shameless."

She then coldly said, "So, are you still willing to listen to him? He's never treated you as a son. He's just been treating you as a tool."

Yang Huang didn't say anything, even though these words made him uncomfortable.

"This old thing is very controlling when it comes to the Yang family and refuses to let anyone have a hand in it. Even if Yang Luolin were still around, he would do the same thing to Yang Luolin."

Yang Xiao lit a cigarette and exhaled smoke. It made her smoky makeup look even more sinister.

"You would all just be his tools to control the Yang family."

It was such a joke. Did Yang Dong think he would live forever? Who could stand against the tide of time?

Once he became part of the soil, what could he control?

"So what are your plans?" Yang Huang asked directly.

His heart had grown cold.

He had no more feelings towards Yang Dong.

He had worked so hard and sacrificed so much for the Yang family. In the end, he was only a tool to Yang Dong.

Yang Dong never treated him as a son, so why should he treat Yang Dong as his father?

"Of course my next plan is to take back what belongs to me," Yang Xiao laughed. "Dad, this Yang family should be under our control, don't you think so?"

"Once this old thing dies, then the head of the Yang family will still be you. I'm not interested in controlling the Yang family."

Yang Huang was surprised. He didn't expect Yang Xiao to say this.

"I'm used to living freely and I'm comfortable with my current lifestyle. I just feel bad for you, so I'm definitely taking the Yang family back!"

"Ok," Yang Huang nodded. "This family should belong to both of us. We'll take the family back and you will be the heir. I'm getting old and won't live for too many more years. But for as long as I'm alive, I'll help you to make this family as strong and powerful as I can!"

There was no point in doing this for anybody else but his own daughter. At least she still regarded him as her father.

Yang Huang left Yang Xiao's house and returned to the Yang house.

There were some things that he could say now, and he could say them clearly now.

Yang Dong was seated in the main hall with a calm face. It was as if the death of those sixteen fighters was no big deal to him.

He snorted when he saw Yang Huang enter the house.

There was no need to pretend anymore.

"You went to look for that crazy daughter of yours?"

If not for Yang Xiao, perhaps the Yang family wouldn't have turned out like that.

Yang Luolin wouldn't have died and Yang Huang would not have found out the truth.

"She's not crazy. She's the heir to the Yang family," replied Yang Huang directly.

"Humph, she's the heir? Without my approval, she'll never be the heir!"

"She can live for a few more decades. But you?"

Yang Huang wasn't giving in at all.

Yang Dong's expression immediately darkened.

Nobody knew how much time he still had. But he was definitely going to die earlier than Yang Xiao, and he might even die before Yang Huang did.

But so what?

He was still the one who decided whom he would hand the family over to!

"I know you want to avenge Yang Luolin. As long as you agree to give this family to Yang Xiao, then she will help you to take revenge," said Yang Huang.

There was a cold smile on Yang Huang's face as he looked at Yang Dong.

Those sixteen fighters had disappeared without a trace, so Yang Dong didn't have anymore people he could use.

How long more could he hold on for?

Since he couldn't take revenge and didn't have as much control as before, the family was going to land in Yang Huang and Yang Xiao's hands sooner or later as Yang Dong became older and older.

"I'm giving you a chance for old times' sake, I hope you will cherish it."

Yang Dong immediately burst out laughing loudly.

He shook his head at Yang Huang as if he was looking at an idiot.

He suddenly snorted. His face was filled with disdain and mocking.

"A chance? No need!" Yang Dong replied. "I'm not dead yet! It's not up to you to make any decisions in this family!"

"Besides, you're no longer the head of the Yang family. The future heir of this family has nothing to do with the two of you."

Yang Huang's expression changed.

He turned around to see a beautiful and young lady walk out and she smiled and nodded at him.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yang Huang's heart skipped a beat. Yang Dong was going to have another son instead?

Was he nuts?!

"What's the point of keeping a son who doesn't listen to me? If I have to pass the Yang family to a son, I'm going to pass it to a son who listens to me!"

Yang Huang was trembling all over. He pointed a finger at Yang Dong but didn't know what to say.

Yang Dong was a nutcase! He was the really crazy one!

"I will avenge Yang Luolin myself, and I will upkeep the reputation of the Yang family myself! I don't need you and your daughter to worry about this! From now on, both of you are no longer part of the Yang family!" declared Yang Dong loudly.

Yang Huang scoffed and didn't say anything. He just turned around and left.

Yang Dong waved the young lady over and gently touched her stomach as a smile appeared on his face. "Since I'm still able to, then of course I'm going to bring up a son who listens to me."

He was most confident of that area. Even though he was getting on in age, he could still get it up.

He could still have another son and groom him for another decade or two.

As for the reputation of the Yang family, he just had to kill Jiang Ning off!

With a \$30 million reward dangling out there, somebody would definitely give it a shot.

He had already found some connections to help him send out his instructions. Jiang Ning's head was worth \$30 million, while the Lins were worth \$10 million each.

All the professional killers had gone crazy. This was a really big deal.

So all the killers who wanted money should have reached Donghai by now, right?

Lin Group.

The office on the top floor.



Lin Yuzhen rubbed her shoulders, then stretched herself lazily like a cat.

"Finally all done!"

She looked up and called out, "Hubby, time to knock off!"

Jiang Ning had nearly fallen asleep.

Lin Yuzhen said she would be done in one hour, but he had waited three hours instead.

He had finished eating all the tidbits in the office, and he had also taken all the tidbits that the staff outside had hidden away. If he had to wait some more, he might just fall asleep.

"Tired?" He smiled and walked over to gently help Lin Yuzhen to massage her shoulders. "Come along, Yuming has arranged for the best masseuse to help you relax."

"I have to thank Yuming!"

Jiang Ning brought Lin Yuzhen to the club where Huang Yuming had everything arranged.

He knew that Lin Yuzhen was very busy and under a lot of pressure. So he got the best masseuse in all of Donghai to serve Lin Yuzhen.

After a comfortable soak in the hot spring, Lin Yuzhen felt so relaxed.

"Everything's ready, they've even got a new steam massage machine, so you can be the first to try it out," Huang Yuming laughed merrily. "I guarantee that you'll be all relaxed after this session."

"Teehee, Yuming, thank you so much!" Lin Yuzhen said gratefully.

She knew Huang Yuming had arranged for all this specially.

Huang Yuming smiled in response. He arranged for a few female staff to ensure Lin Yuzhen's safety and they went in with her.

He turned to look at Jiang Ning. "Big Boss, you'll be on this side?"

Huang Yuming didn't know why Jiang Ning wanted to be in a different room from his wife.

Huang Yuming had arranged for a space that could take two people, so that Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen could share the same room.

Jiang Ning laughed, "Even the stickiest couples should have their own space too. Yuming, you have no idea what's it like to be married, so you can't ask me such a question."

Huang Yuming burst out laughing loudly.

"Come this way then, everything's ready."

Huang Yuming knew that Jiang Ning was trying to imply something else. There was definitely some other reason why he insisted on being apart from Lin Yuzhen.

Jiang Ning didn't say anymore. He walked into the room and lay down on the massage chair.

A masseuse walked in with a mask over her mouth and politely said, "Mr Jiang, I will be your masseuse today."

Jiang Ning didn't look back and replied, "That's great."

The lighting was slightly dim and the masseuse lit the perfumed incense sticks, so a faint fragrance spread through the room.

Jiang Ning continued to lie on the bed with his back filled with all sorts of scars exposed.

The masseuse walked over to the bed and her eyes narrowed when she saw all the scars on Jiang Ning's back.

She took out a bottle of essential oil from her box and poured it onto Jiang Ning's back. She then pulled out a few more other things which made some clinking noises.

"Mr Jiang, you have a lot of scars on your back. Rubbing them with essential oils will help fade them."

The masseuse spoke very gently as she started to spread the essential oil over his back by lightly massaging his skin.

"Oh really? Then I think that would need really good technique, right?" Jiang Ning replied without even looking back. "I trust the masseuse that Yuming hired. Looks like your technique must be pretty good."

"Mr Jiang, you're too kind. I will do a good job today."

Her hands were gently moving around on Jiang Ning's back and helping him to relax.

The fragrance in the air became stronger and stronger.

Jiang Ning lay there without moving. His breathing slowly became more and more even, like he had fallen asleep.

The masseuse carefully observed him for a while. Once she was certain that Jiang Ning was asleep, her eyes suddenly became malicious, bloodthirsty and ruthless!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

She kept one hand on Jiang Ning's back and moved it up and down in a particular rhythm as she used her other hand to secretly pull out a steel needle that was four inches long.

"Go to hell!"

She held the needle high and swung it towards Jiang Ning's heart.

BAM!

Jiang Ning suddenly jumped up from the bed like a leopard. He dodged the steel needle and reached a hand out to grab the masseuse's hand.

All this happened in a split second.

The masseuse was surprised that Jiang Ning hadn't been knocked out by the perfumed incense.

She was even more surprised that Jiang Ning's reaction was so fast!

"Oh my, so now an assassin needs to learn massage techniques too?" Jiang Ning snorted. "But you've entered the wrong profession. If you remained a masseuse in this club, your future would have been brighter."

"Go to hell!"

The masseuse's eyes turned cold and she didn't care what Jiang Ning was saying. She turned her wrist and thrust the steel needle towards Jiang Ning's arm, and Jiang Ning immediately let go of her.

The masseuse took this chance to take a step back. Then she stomped her foot against the floor and made another attack.

Her long legs were like a whip, ferocious and vicious, as she made a kick for Jiang Ning's head.

BAM!

Jiang Ning sat on the bed and his face was completely expressionless. His hand reached out and caught the assassin's heel. He exerted some strength and there was pain in the assassin's eyes.

He didn't stop there. He pulled her leg and she did a split. She could barely stand after that.

Swoosh!

The assassin threw the steel needle in her hand out. But Jiang Ning tilted his head and dodged it.

The dim surroundings didn't affect him at all.

Before the assassin could make another move, Jiang Ning made a move first. He leapt and landed behind the assassin. He used the side of his palm to strike her neck, so she fainted and collapsed onto the floor.

"Big Boss!"

Huang Yuming immediately rushed in when he heard the commotion in the room.

He already had a premonition that Jiang Ning had purposely stayed in the room by himself.

When Huang Yuming saw the masseuse that Jiang Ning had knocked out, his face fell and he gave orders, "Tie her up!"

He passed Jiang Ning's clothes to him, then reached out to pull the mask off the assassin. She turned out to be a beautiful lady and didn't look anything like a professional killer.

"I can't believe a professional killer managed to infiltrate the club!"

Donghai had been cleaned up very well, so now the illegal circle might even be cleaner than the legal circle.

But it was the first time Huang Yuming had come across an assassin like this.

"It's not your fault. It's hard for most people to detect anyone from Assassins Group."

Jiang Ning walked over to the unconscious assassin and pulled her top down to reveal her shoulder.

"Do you need us to go out?" Huang Yuming got a shock. He thought Jiang Ning was going to ravish this beautiful lady there and then.

Jiang Ning didn't reply him. He looked at the tattoo on the assassin's shoulder and his eyes grew cold.

"She's an Yinyang Assassin alright."

"Yinyang Assassin?"

Huang Yuming had never heard of such a thing.

"Yinyang Assassins are considered Silver Level Assassins in Assassins Group. They always move as a pair. This one has been exposed, so her partner is hiding somewhere."

Jiang Ning snorted. "Once one isn't successful, you might relax and think there's no more threat, so the other will take this chance to suddenly appear and kill you!"

Huang Yuming got a fright at these words.

"Surround the club now! Nobody is to enter or leave the place!"

He didn't think such a formidable killer would have appeared.

If the target wasn't Jiang Ning but someone else, that person would have died by now.

"Seal off Donghai, don't let off anybody who might be the slightest bit suspicious!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Huang Yuming had never heard of Yinyang Assassins before this.

Never mind him – probably nobody in a small city like Donghai would have heard of them. After all, nobody knew if this Assassins Group really existed or not, since they've always been so mysterious.

But Jiang Ning knew that Assassins Group existed and had existed for a long time now. They went back nearly a hundred years now.

He possibly knew Assassins Group even better than the current leader of the group.

Jiang Ning had killed off three Gold Level Assassins and sixteen Silver Level Assassins. He didn't bother counting those that were just reckless idiots.

Back when his name was famous, countless people wanted him dead. During that time, Assassins Group had received mission after mission, ranging anywhere from US\$10 million to US\$30 million, and eventually it went up to US\$100 million.

There was one who even offered US\$300 million to kill Jiang Ning!

Assassins Group had sent out several killers, including one of their best. But the result was always the same. None of the assassins came back alive. They all died at Jiang Ning's hands.

This made the group very frustrated and angry. The leader even said that he wanted to fight it out with Jiang Ning someday.

But Jiang Ning still hadn't seen the leader appear yet.

Because the leader knew that he couldn't die yet. If he had to fight Jiang Ning, then Jiang Ning wasn't going soft on him.

But Jiang Ning was surprised that there was another assassin after him now.

Huang Yuming's expression became grim as he looked at the unconscious female killer.

He had heard from Fei that Jiang Ning's enemies were all extremely powerful, and Broken Sword and Ye Xinhua couldn't even be compared to them.

Broken Sword and Ye Xinhua were the most powerful fighters Huang Yuming knew about.

But Fei said that they were nothing.

Huang Yuming could feel it now. This Assassins Group was mysterious enough to make him feel a tremendous pressure weighing on himself.

"Big Boss, is it an enemy from your past?"

Huang Yuming was a little worried.

Donghai was very well protected and secure, so it was known as a forbidden territory. But they were a threat only to the illegal circles of other cities.

A powerful group like Assassins Group was clearly more formidable than he had imagined.

"Nope," Jiang Ning just shook his head. "Who has so much money to burn like this, hiring a Silver Level Assassin to come here and die?"

His voice was filled with contempt.

Even if a Gold Level Assassin came for him, Jiang Ning dared to kill him.

No matter how many assassins the group sent, Jiang Ning was going to kill all of them.

"The Yang family," Jiang Ning answered.

Given the current situation, the only one who had a feud with him now was the Yang family. Yang Luolin had died in Tianhai and since he was so dearly loved by his grandfather, the Yang family wasn't going to let him off.

He thought that Yang Xiao would be the one who came, since she had already tested the waters in Tianhai and would make a move. But from the looks of it, the Yang family had a lot of problems within itself.

So the Old Master of the Yang family ended up spending a huge sum to hire Assassins Group to kill him.

"The Yang family? They're really bold!" Huang Yuming fumed. "Do they think we don't dare to touch them?"

He couldn't wait to bring the wolves to kill their way into Jianzhou and raze the Yang family to the ground.

"Big Boss, I'll bring the men to Jianzhou now and destroy the Yang family!"

Jiang Ning shook his head. "No hurry. Since there's an assassin here, then it's a good chance to test the security and information network of Donghai."



Huang Yuming was stunned for a while.

Jiang Ning was really confident because he was so highly skilled!

He actually treated this crisis as a chance for Donghai to increase its reputation as a forbidden territory.

Donghai was their headquarters, and all the people important to Jiang Ning, the Lin family, were here too. They couldn't afford any mistakes.

Did Jiang Ning really want to take such a risk?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I have confidence in Donghai," said Jiang Ning. "If Assassins Group can't get into Donghai either, then Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory will be cast in stone."

When that happened, Donghai would really be a stable and completely safe forbidden territory.

Even if powerful enemies tried to attack, they wouldn't think of making trouble within Donghai itself because its reputation as a forbidden territory was enough to scare them.

Besides, now someone else was spending money so that Jiang Ning could test out Donghai's security level and information network, so of course Jiang Ning was more than happy.

"Got it!"

Huang Yuming never questioned Jiang Ning's orders and only carried them out.

He knew that if he could defend against Assassins Group perfectly despite being his first time coming across them, then that would be a great improvement for himself as well.

With Jiang Ning supporting him, Huang Yuming became confident too.

"Alright now, you'll be fully in charge of this matter. I'll be watching from afar, don't worry."

"Got it!"

Huang Yuming nodded respectfully.

Jiang Ning turned to walk into Lin Yuzhen's room. He could finally have a relaxing time with his adorable wife.

Meanwhile, Huang Yuming glanced at the unconscious female assassin on the floor.

"Bring her to the secret room!"

In no time.

In the secret room.

SPLASH!

A bucket of ice water was splashed onto the female assassin's face. She

instantly regained consciousness and immediately looked around warily.

After struggling for a while, she realized that her hands and feet were tightly bound and she couldn't break free at all.

"Hoping to kill yourself?" Huang Yuming laughed coldly. "I've already removed the poison on your teeth. I won't let you die, so you can't die!"

Her eyes narrowed but her expression didn't change.

She looked disdainfully at Huang Yuming. "If you dare to kill me, then Assassins Group will keep sending more assassins here to kill all of you!"

Assassins Group was that powerful and that domineering!

"Hoho, sure, you're all welcome anytime!" Huang Yuming didn't bother being polite either.

The reputation of Donghai as forbidden territory was going to be built on top of the corpses of these assassins.

"Spit it out! Where's your partner?"

Her expression changed. She didn't expect the man in front of her to know about her partner.

"Yinyang Assassins – one works openly and the other works in the darkness. Since you've failed, then your partner is going to choose an even better opportunity to strike, right?"

She scoffed coldly and didn't respond.

She wasn't going to reply any of his questions.

"You don't want to talk?" Huang Yuming nodded. "Don't worry, I've got plenty of ways to make you talk. Since your bones are so hard, I'm going to slowly smash every bone you have until you talk!"

After mixing around in the illegal circle for so many years, Huang Yuming had plenty of tricks up his sleeve.

Jiang Ning taught him to convince others to listen to him by their good conduct. He understood that, but now this concerned the reputation of Donghai as a forbidden territory, the safety of Lin Yuzhen and her family, as well as the responsibility that he and his brothers had!

Set a good example to convince others?

Maybe next time.

The soundproofing of the secret room was very good, so the bloodcurdling screams couldn't be heard from outside.

After barely half an hour, the female assassin couldn't take it anymore.

She panted and her voice was a little weak, "Just...just kill me...kill me..."

"Wrong answer. Continue."

Huang Yuming continued to keep an expressionless face on.

His men continued to torture her and there as a bloodcurdling and heartwrenching sound that could now be heard a little from the outside..

On the other side, Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen continued with a steam sauna and even a facial.

When Jiang Ning saw Lin Yuzhen's soft and supple skin, he suddenly had an urge to kiss her.

"Wifey, I think there's something on your face."

Jiang Ning leaned over with a straight face...



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What is it?" Lin Yuzhen touched her own face but didn't feel anything.

"Don't move."

Jiang Ning reached a hand out and Lin Yuzhen closed her eyes. She could feel something touch her face.

It was a little warm, and it touched her for a very brief moment.

She opened her eyes and saw Jiang Ning flicking his hand.

"What was it?"

"Nothing, just a strand of hair."

Jiang Ning dusted his hands off and pursed his lips as he thought to himself, "That was too quick so there's no feel to it."

"Hair? Mine?"

Lin Yuzhen looked at him in disbelief. She had just gone through a facial, so how could a strand of hair be stuck on her face?

Jiang Ning didn't continue this topic and left with Lin Yuzhen.

"Come along, let's go home."

He had left the other Yinyang Assassin to Huang Yuming. He was going to coordinate with Butler Zhao and Governor Zhang to make sure that Donghai's model as a forbidden territory was built well.

This was a good chance to test it out.

Meanwhile,

Huang Yuming had gotten what he wanted from the female assassin.

He wasn't afraid of those people with backbone. He believed that no matter how hard one's bones were, they wouldn't be hard anymore after he had smashed a few of them.

Butler Zhao and Governor Zhang arrived soon after.

They were both shocked when they heard from Huang Yuming that a frightening assassin had managed to infiltrate Donghai.

Governor Zhang had never heard of this group before, while Butler Zhao knew a

thing or two.

"That's an international group of assassins with many highly skilled fighters. Their assassins are all over the world, and it is a very terrifying group indeed."

That was the information that Butler Zhao had on hand.

"They actually dared to come to Donghai to kill Mr Jiang?"

"Tsk, Big Boss doesn't care about these tiny fish and shrimps. But to us, this is an excellent chance to make sure Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory is firmly rooted in everyone's mind. Big Boss is using himself as bait, so we can't let him down."

"That's right!" Governor Zhang immediately nodded. "What do you need me to do? Just say it."

"The information network has already been built around Donghai, it's a good chance to test out how effective it really is now."

The three of them looked at one another and nodded.

It was time to take action!

Butler Zhao's information network started operating immediately and coordinated with the official reports from Governor Zhang to look through everybody who had gone in and out from Donghai.

Any suspicious person and any unknown persons who had come in recently were all targets.

Huang Yuming's eyes started glowing when he watched the computer screens light up and work quickly.

Brother Gou and the rest had also planted themselves in every corner of Donghai and their subordinates were searching the entire city.

Soon enough, they found their target.

All this went by as if nothing had happened. There was no commotion in Donghai and everyone went about their usual routines.

At Golden Jade Restaurant.

They were celebrating one of the wolves' birthday, so Huang Yuming closed the restaurant and didn't allow anyone in.

There was only one table in the huge hall, with flowers and a huge cake, as well as a banner that read "Happy Birthday Brother Gou!"

There was a bunch of signatures below that. Only Brother Gou still had a name. The rest were all numbers, from Number 2 to Number 30.

The restaurant chefs and staff started getting busy.

Everyone knew that Huang Yuming treated his brothers well, especially since Brother Gou and the wolves were now at a higher position than before. So since it was one of the wolves' birthday, they had to throw a celebration.

"Everybody listen up! Today is Brother Gou's birthday, so whip up your best dish so that he can have a good celebration!" the head chef ordered the rest of the kitchen.

"Yes chef!"

The kitchen quickly started getting busy, washing the vegetables, slicing, stewing, making the sides...everyone was so busy.

The dishes went out one after another. Everyone around the table was giving a toast to the birthday boy, who was seated in the middle.

"Brother Gou, happy birthday!"

"Since it's your birthday, the brothers got together to get you a present!" someone yelled out loudly.

"What did you get me?" Brother Gou raised an eyebrow. He started getting excited and rubbed his hands together. "Don't just leave me hanging like that, what is it?"

Huang Yuming laughed and turned to one of the waiters and said, "Bring the present over."

The waiter nodded and carried a box at the side over with both hands, then placed it on the table.

"Open it," Huang Yuming instructed the waiter.

The waiter undid the ribbon and opened the box, but there was nothing inside.

"I love this present!!" Brother Gou scratched his head and laughed sheepishly. "I really love this present very much, so I'll accept it?"

"Of course! Why are you being so polite with us?"

"I'm going to accept it then!"

"Go ahead."

Huang Yuming also nodded.

The waiter was full of questions. Could it be that they had drunk too much? There was absolutely nothing in the box, so what present was he accepting?

Suddenly,

A dangerous presence overwhelmed the waiter's heart.

He could feel a murderous air locked on himself!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



The one closest to himself was Brother Gou!

BOOOM!

This punch came too suddenly.

Brother Gou immediately took action. He steadied his legs and threw a hard punch towards that waiter's head.

"I'm accepting the present!"

The waiter got a terrible shock and immediately realized that his true identity had been exposed.

He couldn't think so much anymore. He had to run. If he was surrounded by so many of them, he was dead meat.

But where could he go?

All the wolves had formed a circle around him and he was right in the center. All of them didn't look drunk anymore. Their eyes had become sharp and murderous.

"Can't believe you've hidden yourself so well and actually managed to infiltrate Golden Jade Restaurant," Number 5 laughed coldly. "Your disguise is pretty well done, but too bad, there are still flaws."

Huang Yuming sat at the table and continued taking food for himself and drinking his wine. He looked up at the assassin and asked calmly, "You don't get what happened?"

The assassin didn't have the humble look of a waiter anymore. His gaze was sharp and he was ready to attack or defend anytime.

"You've chosen to disguise yourself as the wrong person," Huang Yuming continued calmly. "The staff at my restaurant don't have to wait on the brothers at the side like that."

The assassin's eyes narrowed and pulled the realistic mask off his face.

He flicked his wrist and short dagger appeared in his hand. A murderous air gushed out from him.

"Gou, I won't talk anymore. Accept the gift, it's from Big Boss."

"Alright!!"

Brother Gou roared and swung his fists like a strong wind. At the same time, the rest also made their move.

"Formation technique!"

In that instant, more than ten of them came together and became fierce wolves. They took their positions to become one body to attack and unleashed their power!

Brother Gou led the way, and the attack came like the rushing tide. Wave after wave of punches came at the assassin with no gap in between. This tremendous pressure immediately covered the assassin.

"They're too fast!"

The assassin was in shock and horror. What was this formation technique? How could more than ten men be so well coordinated?

What he saw wasn't one pair of fists, but countless fists!

He had finally found a chance to fight back, only to find that their defence was as strong as an iron wall and there was no way of penetrating this defence!

BAM!

The assassin was best at killing in secret. The fact that he could take on five people at one shot was already not bad.

But when faced with a formation attack like this, he couldn't block their attacks, neither could he defend himself. He hadn't even managed to make one move. Brother Gou had already punched his chest and sent him flying.

After that, an entire cloud of fists buried him alive.

"No!! NO!! NO!!!"

Chaotic attack of fists!

In less than a day, the Yinyang Silver Level Assassins from the Assassins Group had lost their lives.

This hadn't just proved how powerful the wolves' formation technique was. It was a testament to Donghai's forbidden territory model.

Huang Yuming didn't hesitate. He quickly gave Butler Zhao photos of the two assassins and told him to spread the word that they had died in Donghai.

This was to let Assassins Group know, and also to tell those who were still doubting Donghai's reputation.

Even if an assassin from Assassins Group came to Donghai, he wasn't getting out alive!

Many people worldwide soon paid attention to the name Donghai.

Many people knew about Assassins Group. Even Silver Level Assassins couldn't live for more than a day in Donghai?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

How scary was this forbidden territory?

That was a place they must never go to! It was hell!

Do you know what forbidden territory means?

Go to Donghai and you'll find out!

Once the news got out, Assassins Group responded. In just two days, Huang Yuming tracked down another assassin.

He didn't go soft at all. He sent an attack out and killed off another Silver Level Assassin.

This one was even more shocking.

Within three days, three Silver Level Assassins had perished. No city had ever had such a high level of information and defence strategy.

Huang Yuming got Butler Zhao to send out a photo of that assassin and sent a note along with it: Send a Gold Level one next time!

But no Gold Level Assassin appeared. The client hadn't given them enough money to mobilize a Gold Level Assassin.

Reputation was one problem, but money was a bigger issue.

There were a few in Assassins Group that didn't kill for money, but the vast majority was killing for money. Without a sufficient reward, nobody was willing to risk their lives.

Risk and price were positively correlated.

There was no more news from Assassins Group, and that made the reputation of Donghai as a forbidden territory even more solid than before.

Huang Yuming grabbed this chance to quickly check for any loopholes and improved Donghai's security. Butler Zhao also seized this opportunity to fix any problems with his information network.

This was a huge thing for the advancement of Donghai.

With the cooperation of Governor Zhang, Donghai was now an extremely stable and peaceful place. If anybody thought of creating trouble here, they had to think twice!

The one in the foulest mood now was clearly Yang Dong.

His face was pale from anger. He had spent so much money, but failed to kill Jiang Ning.

He couldn't even ask for his money back from Assassins Group since they had lost three Silver Level Assassins. The fact that they didn't ask him for even more money was already not bad on their part.

Those were the rules. Assassins Group never worked for nothing. They would take the money regardless of whether they were successful in their mission or not.

Since their Silver Level Assassins couldn't kill the target, that only proved that the client was trying to use a cheaper option to kill off someone too powerful for Silver Level Assassins and had provided inaccurate information. Assassins Group wasn't so dumb.

If Yang Dong wanted them to continue sending assassins, then as long as he paid more, then they would naturally send a Gold Level Assassin to accomplish this mission.

The latest price to enter Donghai to kill someone was now \$60 million.

Yang Dong was so angry that he smashed his phone. If killing someone cost \$60 million, they might as well rob a bank.

But what Yang Dong didn't know was that if Assassins Group found out that Yang Dong's target was Jiang Ning, they wouldn't take the job and might even kill Yang Dong instead. Jiang Ning was the one who killed so many of their Gold Level Assassins!

They would rather kill Yang Dong because it was better than sending so many of their assassins to die and cause them to suffer great losses.

"Don't tell me nobody can kill that bastard?!" Yang Dong cursed angrily.

Was it really so difficult to kill one Jiang Ning?

"You cowardly turtle, it's little wonder you keep hiding in Donghai," Yang Dong clenched his teeth and laughed coldly. "If you've got guts, don't stay hiding in Donghai!"


He thought that Jiang Ning was hiding in Donghai and didn't dare to come out because he was afraid he might die.

But he couldn't bear to spend another \$60 million just to kill Jiang Ning. The Yang family didn't have this kind of money for him to spend either.

"That's a lot of money!"

Someone was clapping and spoke disdainfully and very sarcastically.  
"Someone threw millions of dollars away but didn't even see a ripple in the water."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"The Old Master of the Yang family is so generous, your granddaughter here really admires you."

It was Yang Xiao!

She smiled as she walked in and sat down on a chair.

Many people in Jianzhou now knew that Yang Dong was the one who hired those assassins and but none of them succeeded. He didn't manage to get revenge, and was now a laughingstock, plus he might even have offended Assassins Group.

"What are you doing here?!" Yang Dong shouted angrily. "Are you here to laugh at me?"

"Oh I wouldn't dare to," Yang Xiao put her feet up and glanced at Yang Dong. "You're the Old Master of the Yang family and you're in control of the family. So even if you spend millions of dollars to hire an assassin because of that dead son of yours, nobody can say anything."

"in....."

"You..."

"But if the ancestors of the Yang family found out about this in the nether world, I'm not sure if they'd get angry."

Yang Xiao glanced at Yang Dong from the corner of her eye. "After you die and meet with them, do you think they'd call you a wastrel?"

Yang Dong was so angry that his body was shaking, but he couldn't get a single word out.

After reaching a certain age, one would start thinking about death.

And when he died, the ancestors would definitely blame him for the current state of the Yang family.

Yang Dong felt his limbs grow cold just thinking about it.

"What do you want?!" Yang Dong yelled at her.

"Very simple. I want the Yang family!" Yang Xiao didn't bother beating around the bush. "As long as you hand the Yang family over, I'll help you to take revenge. I'll shatter Donghai's reputation of being a forbidden territory and bring Jiang Ning's head back to you."

Yang Dong narrowed his eyes at her.

"Grandpa, you have to admit that you're old. Did you really think you could still have a son?" Yang Xiao snorted, "That's someone else's!"

"You're spouting nonsense!"

Yang Xiao didn't get angry. Instead she laughed and took out a medical report and threw it at Yang Dong.

Yang Dong looked at the report and his hands started shaking.

"How...how did you find out?"

"How I found out doesn't matter, I have many ways of getting things done. You just have to focus on the result," Yang Xiao tapped her finger on one section of the report. "You're impotent now, so don't be so confident."

These words were like a bolt of lightning that struck Yang Dong on the head and his mind went blank.

The humiliation of being cuckolded overwhelmed his heart.

He had forgotten that he had done the same thing to his own son before.

"I'm going to say this just once, and I'm giving you this chance because we're related. You'd better agree to it, otherwise once I finish off Donghai and Jiang Ning, I'll return to Jianzhou and take this family away anyway!"

Yang Xiao was really domineering now.

She got up and walked over to Yang Dong, who was still sitting in stunned silence. She reached out and patted him on the shoulder.

"I know you don't like me, but I'm the most outstanding of the next generation of Yangs. You know very well that the Yang family can continue being as glorious as before only if you pass the family to me. As for you...you're really just a wastrel."

Yang Xiao turned and left.

Yang Dong's lips were still trembling. He felt as though his dignity had just been broken to pieces, and there were fragments all over the floor...



"I've changed the directorate of all the companies under the Yang family, so they're all our people," said Yang Huang. "You don't have to worry, before I die, I'm going to clean up this family and give it to you in one good piece."

He wanted to use this chance to make it up to his own daughter.

Yang Xiao nodded. "Thanks, Dad."

Yang Huang trembled slightly. This was the first time Yang Xiao ever thanked him.

He didn't say anything. He left to attend to other matters.

The family business was huge and was involved in several industries. Each one was messy and complicated, so what he wanted to do was to tidy up everything and pass it to Yang Xiao.

He wanted the Yang family to become a real top tier family in the southeast region!

As for Yang Xiao, she was ready to move out.

Yan Chong called all five tigers together along with all the best fighters in the illegal circle.

Their target was very clear – Donghai!

Since it was a fight in the illegal circle, then it should be settled between illegal circles. Yang Dong actually hired an assassin. Did he think that assassin could kill off everyone in Donghai's illegal circle?

What a joke.

Yang Xiao sat right in front, while Yan Chong was beside her. He asked with great respect, "Boss, I've gathered all the men. When do we make our move?"

He only obeyed orders and did not advise her against doing this.

"This Donghai is known as a forbidden territory, and now that they've killed off some assassins they're going around boasting about it," Yang Xiao snorted. "But who doesn't know the rules of the illegal circle?"

Any assassin who ended up being surrounded by the illegal circle of any city was dead meat.

These assassins were best at killing silently, and they had to kill their target on their first try, and run if they failed. But once the illegal circle was mobilized,

then he was up against a few hundred or even a few thousand men!

If everyone just threw one punch each, that poor assassin would be in pieces.

Yang Xiao knew the rules of the illegal circle only too well.

She looked at Yan Chong. "Tomorrow! Tomorrow we make our move!"

"Right now, Donghai's reputation of being a forbidden territory is at its peak. So if we manage to break through and wipe them out at this time, don't you think it'll be the best feeling ever?"

She laughed rather maniacally.

The feeling of coming down hard on others and crushing them under her foot when they were at their peak was definitely very special.

Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory had already reached the southeast region, and there were many in the city who felt that Donghai would rise to become the most powerful illegal circle in the region.

Donghai could dream on!

Yang Xiao refused to acknowledge this, and neither did some of the other powerful cities.

Donghai was only a tiny city that was even smaller than Shengcheng. So what right did they have to be of equal status as them?

"Boss, since Donghai has been able to reach this level, then I believe they have some endurance. I think we should make more preparations," said Yan Chong seriously after some thought.

They were all not reckless people. Without using a little more brain power, they would have died on the streets by now and would never have made it to where they were right now.

Donghai wasn't easy to deal with, but they weren't afraid.

Even when Master Fu and Broken Sword were around, Jianzhou's illegal circle had never been afraid of them. If Master Fu didn't have a family from the north backing him, nobody would have allowed Master Fu to control a city for more than twenty years.

And nobody would have thought that Master Fu and Broken Sword would have been killed by their own backer.

Jiang Ning was just lucky to have picked up the pieces after they died.

"Humph, how you do it is your business!" Yang Xiao went straight to the point. "The five tigers together can't kill Jiang Ning? When you went to test the waters the last time, you guys said that Donghai isn't anything to worry about."

Yan Chong nodded. "Yes boss, we promise to wipe out all the skilled fighters of Donghai!"

"Tomorrow, we make our move!"

Meanwhile,

Jiang Ning was already on his way to Jianzhou!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I'm the boss, but in the end I have to do the work," Jiang Ning said a little helplessly into the phone. "Leave the expansion into the southeast region to me, wifey, don't worry about it. I promise to complete this mission, and I promise I won't womanize or anything like that. If you don't believe me, you can check when I come back."

Huang Yuming was sitting next to Jiang Ning and tried his best not to laugh.

He really wanted to laugh but dared not laugh. His face was going to become swollen soon.

Who would have thought? The great demon king called Jiang Ning didn't have a temper at all when he was talking to Lin Yuzhen.

Even though it was just over the phone, Jiang Ning's voice was so gentle.

After hanging up, Jiang Ning exhaled loudly.

"It can't be helped. Once women start to stick to you, there's nothing you can do," he said very seriously as he shrugged.

Huang Yuming nodded, "Indeed, Big Boss, no one can resist your charm, so Yuzhen must have fallen in deeply."

When it was time to bootlick, then it had to be done. And it had to be done well.

Soon enough, Jiang Ning's expression returned to its normal state, and there was a sinister look in his eyes.

"The Yang family have offended me so many times and they even dared to name Lin Yuzhen as a target for the Assassins Group. Surely I can't just ignore that," he narrowed his eyes. "Today, I'm going to bring all of you along to kill those people!"

Butler Zhao had gotten information that Jianzhou's illegal circle was gathering men, and if everything went as planned, they would kill their way into Donghai the next day.

They wanted to come down hard on Donghai at the peak of its reputation and authority as a forbidden territory.

But little did they know - Jiang Ning was already coming for them!

"This time, we're going to raze Jianzhou's illegal circle to the ground, and wipe the Yang family out!" Huang Yuming said in a sinister voice.

They brought fifteen out of the thirty wolves. Just fifteen!

The other fifteen were hiding in various parts of Donghai, just in case anything cropped up.

There were even more men undergoing the first stage of training right now. They were slowly training themselves to become the guardians of Donghai!

Jiang Ning knew that it wasn't enough to rely on himself and the wolves to truly make Donghai a forbidden territory.

Donghai needed more people to keep growing in power.

When they started to kill their way overseas and reach the peak of the world, Donghai would need even more people to be its guardian!

"Remember, use your example to convince others," said Jiang Ning.

"Yes Big Boss, I know we have to make sure we've got all the formalities right. I've already prepared our gift as visitors to Jianzhou."

Jiang Ning nodded and closed his eyes as he leaned back into his seat. He told Huang Yuming to call him after they had reached Jianzhou.

He was going to take a nap before killing people.

Over at Jianzhou.

It was one of the top three most powerful cities in the southeast region.

The illegal circle of Jianzhou was famous because Yang Xiao was here. She was a descendant of the Yang family that had controlled Jianzhou for three generations.

She had a powerful network in both the legal and illegal circles.

All these years, the Yang family had bullied so many people.

There were so many victims who had their possessions snatched away and their loved ones killed.

But nobody in the city dared to say anything!

Nobody dared to offend the Yang family, and nobody dared to offend the Madwoman, Yang Xiao. Besides giving in to their fate and swallowing their pride, they could only secretly swear that they wouldn't let the Yang family off even after they died.

Night fell on the city.

It was past 2AM.

But the lights in one estate were still on.

This estate belonged to Yang Xiao, and it was where Yan Chong and the five tigers stayed.

There were more than a hundred men standing in the courtyard. Yan Chong had chosen them carefully, and they were all powerful fighters.

This was the core of Jianzhou's illegal circle!

VWOOOM!

There was a pot at the front of the courtyard. Yan Chong poured some wine in, then lit it on fire. The flames shot up into the sky.

Everyone in the courtyard became excited and pumped up when they saw this.

"We will move out in a few moments. We will kill our way into Donghai, and wipe out all of Donghai's illegal circle!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yan Chong declared loudly, "All this about Donghai being a forbidden territory is bullshit!"

"Let those people see who are the real kings of the southeast region illegal circles!"

"Wipe out everyone in Donghai's illegal circle!"

"Fuck them all!"

"Kill them! Kill them! Kill them!"

The shouts became louder and more agitated, their roars filling the sky.

Yan Chong got his men to pour more wine into the pot, and there were many bowls next to it.

This was the wine they would drink before making an attack.

"After drinking this, we will raze Donghai to the ground!"

"Raze Donghai to the ground!"

"Raze Donghai to the ground!"

All of them shouted as they took a bowl of wine from the pot, glugged it down, then smashed the bowl in their hands.

The murderous air in the crowd had reached its maximum. They couldn't wait to get to Donghai and kill all those people.

Yan Chong was very pleased with how riled up everyone was.

He was best at riling up the men. With this sort of fighting spirit, Donghai wasn't going to be a forbidden territory for long!

And standing next to him were the legendary five tigers of Jianzhou.

Besides Mountain Tiger and Hunter Tiger who went to Shengcheng with Yang Xiao the last time, the other three were also equally strong.

"Your mission is to kill Jiang Ning and all the trash that's by his side!" Yan Chong ordered in a cold voice. "I hear that Jiang Ning has trained thirty men, and you tested them the last time. Do you have confidence?"

"Humph, they're just average!" Mountain Tiger snorted. "I can kill off ten of them myself!"

His arrogance had reached its peak!

He didn't seem to have any regard for the wolves at all. The last time, so many of them had surrounded him and Hunter Tiger. If the two tigers had used their maximum power, then at least five of the wolves would have died that day.

"Excellent!" Yan Chong nodded. "The most important thing is to kill Jiang Ning! The other useless bums with him are nothing!"

"What if Jiang Ning hides himself?" Hunter Tiger couldn't help but ask. "Do we kill those useless things before looking for Jiang Ning?"

"Ha, if he hides away like a coward, then kill everybody! Including the woman with him!"

Yan Chong's eyes grew cold.

He knew how people worked.

If Jiang Ning hid himself and everyone else got killed, then Jiang Ning would die even more terribly.

"I hope you don't go hiding away," said Yan Chong in a malicious voice.

"Of course I won't hide."

Suddenly, the main gate of the courtyard was kicked open. There was a loud crashing sound as the gate fell onto the ground and kicked up a huge cloud of dust.

Yan Chong's expression changed and he looked up with a start.

Jiang Ning!

He was actually in Jianzhou!

He actually dared to come to Jianzhou!

"I won't hide, and I've actually come here instead." Jiang Ning sauntered in like he was walking around in his own backyard. He placed his hands behind his back and there was a faint smile on his face.

"I'm not sure if you welcome me around here?"

Jiang Ning was followed by only Huang Yuming and fifteen wolves. Yan Chong was initially caught by surprise, but then he quickly started laughing loudly.



"HAHAHAHA! You actually came all the way here just to die!"

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to be so stupid.

Did he really think he was invincible?

This was Jianzhou!

This was their territory! The five tigers of Jianzhou were even more powerful than Broken Sword, and all the men here were strong enough to smash Jiang Ning so badly that you wouldn't be able to find his body.

"Since you've come knocking on our door, then you've saved us some trouble!"

Yan Chong waved his hands. "Surround them!"

All the fighters who had just gotten excited got even more excited.

They couldn't believe that their target actually came knocking on their door.

Was there anyone so dumb?

They had never seen anyone so dumb before!

All the men quickly surrounded Jiang Ning and his gang. Those behind them even put the gate back upright and locked it so that Jiang Ning and gang had no way to escape.

Jiang Ning remained calm as he looked at all the excited eyes staring at him.

There was no change in his expression, and there was also no change in his emotions.

Even if he was surrounded by a bunch of dogs, he had no need to be nervous.

"We'll kill you guys first, then raze Donghai to the ground!"

Yan Chong declared loudly. "What's this bullshit about Donghai being a forbidden territory? I'm going to let you know what the consequences of offending our boss are!"

His expression darkened and there was murder in his eyes. "Attack!"

Everyone started moving immediately.

They swung their weapons and rushed at Jiang Ning and his gang.

Jiang Ning just stood there as confidently as ever. He kept his hands behind his back and didn't even bother looking up.

He just calmly said, "Go and have fun."

BOOM!

Their explosive presence was instantly unleashed.

The wolves had gone mad.

"Formation technique!"

Brother Gou yelled loudly and all fifteen of them instantly became one body. They were like a terrifying and evil dragon that was moving about ferociously, with its huge mouth ready to swallow anyone.

"Attack!"

The fifteen of them were one body and unleashed their power as one.

Number 9 threw out both punches at the first person that came near to him, causing the opponent's head to explode instantly and sent red and white stuff flying!

It was such a gory sight.

This terrifying attack was so frightening that the men stopped for a moment.

But the wolves didn't stop.

Jiang Ning said that they were to leave no man behind!

The battle became even fiercer than before.

It didn't look like a hundred people surrounding fifteen to kill them, but it looked more like these fifteen men had surrounded a hundred people to kill them!

Yan Chong's expression immediately changed when he saw this.

These fifteen men didn't sound as weak as what Mountain Tiger said earlier. What was this formation technique?

He saw Jiang Ning was making his way towards them. Yan Chong's eyelid twitched and he pointed to Jiang Ning.

He changed his plans immediately.

"All of you, kill him!"

With that, the five tigers made a pounce for Jiang Ning. They were both unhinged and violent!

If all five of them joined hands, they could kill Broken Sword easily, so what was Jiang Ning?

"DIE!"

Mountain Tiger gave a shout as his explosive fists boomed loudly, as if a real tiger was roaring. He was terrifying to behold!

This first move was fatal!

Mountain Tiger didn't save any of his strength. He punched forward and hard, as if he was about to swallow up all the mountains and rivers with this fist.

He gave a low shout like a ferocious tiger coming down the mountains as his fists were headed for Jiang Ning's heart. Hunter Tiger also made a fatal move.

The other three jumped behind Jiang Ning to block him from escaping.

They were going to kill Jiang Ning!

Mountain Tiger saw that Jiang Ning had no reaction after he had thrust that punch out and snorted coldly. So Jiang Ning couldn't even react in time?

Swoosh!

But just before his fists could reach Jiang Ning, Jiang Ning moved.

He lightly stepped aside and Mountain Tiger's fists went past Jiang Ning. He ended up punching air.

It was some amazing footwork. Jiang Ning had only shifted by an inch, and everything changed.

Mountain Tiger was furious. He had punched air!

He stepped hard on the ground and the ground shook.

He propelled himself forward and swung another fist that was aimed straight for Jiang Ning's head.

"Go to hell!"

At the same time, Hunter Tiger swung his fist towards Jiang Ning's lower body.

With one coming from the top and one coming from the bottom, they were well coordinated and made it hard for Jiang Ning to defend himself.

Most people would have suffered a blow from at least one of them. Either his legs would be broken, otherwise his head would be smashed in.

But...they were facing Jiang Ning!

That was the invincible God of War!

Jiang Ning's eyes narrowed and he moved in an instant.

This move was as fast as lightning. He lowered his body suddenly and threw a punch outwards.

CRAAAAACCKK!

His joints cracked like fried soy beans in the wok!

A terrifying energy rushed out through his fists and there was a series of blasts in the air.

Mountain Tiger's expression immediately changed but he couldn't dodge in time. He wanted to move back but it was not possible now.

Jiang Ning didn't defend himself, but actually made an attack! So he had no choice but to receive Jiang Ning's punch.

Hunter Tiger saw a chance and ran even faster as his long legs kicked towards Jiang Ning's thigh. The power within this kick was enough to smash Jiang Ning's thigh bone!

BOOM!

The fist reached him!

Everything happened too quickly!

Jiang Ning's fist landed on the arm that Mountain Tiger used to block the attack. In an instant, Mountain Tiger's face paled and he felt like his arms were numb.

His arms...were definitely broken!

"Hunter Tiger!" he roared. He knew how terrifying Jiang Ning could be, so their

chance to kill Jiang Ning relied on Hunter Tiger's kick now.

Jiang Ning was facing Mountain Tiger while his back was facing Hunter Tiger. He didn't seem to have seen the kick coming.

"Go to hell!"

Hunter Tiger's voice rumbled like thunder as his kick contained all the energy he had.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

But suddenly!

Jiang Ning turned his head. He only turned his head and he didn't move his body.

One hand stretched out and caught Hunter Tiger's heel. CRAAAACK...

His fingers released a terrifying amount of strength and crushed Hunter Tiger's heel with his bare hands.

"AHHH!!" Hunter Tiger immediately howled in pain.

He couldn't believe that Jiang Ning had so much strength.

He only used two fingers to crush his heel!

"You..."

He didn't even have time to say anything. Jiang Ning had already grabbed his heels, held him up and smashed him against the ground.

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

.....

Jiang Ning smashed Hunter Tiger against the ground three or four times, like he was smashing a log.

The ground resounded with boom after boom.

PFFT!

Hunter Tiger couldn't get a single word out. He sprayed blood whenever he opened his mouth, and he had no idea how many bones in his body were broken.

"Get lost!"

Jiang Ning gave a low shout, then kicked Hunter Tiger hard enough to send him flying, and he nearly crashed into Yan Chong.

Yan Chong's expression was completely horrified and his heart was in his mouth.

That was terrifying!

That was truly terrifying!

Was this guy even human?

Without even putting up a fight, Mountain Tiger's arms were crushed and Hunter Tiger...

When he thought of how Jiang Ning held onto Hunter Tiger's legs and smashed him repeatedly against the ground, his legs started trembling.

This guy...this guy wasn't human for sure!!

"Kill...kill him! KILL HIM!"

A terror suddenly rose in Yan Chong's heart and he couldn't hold it in at all. He could only shout at the remaining three tigers to kill Jiang Ning.

But now the other three didn't dare to look down on Jiang Ning.

He only used one move to put Hunter Tiger out and severely injured Mountain Tiger.

Jiang Ning was too fast. He moved too quickly, his punches were too fast and his strength was explosive. Who could block that?

"A grandmaster..." Fierce Tiger narrowed his eyes and his voice sounded wary as he stared hard at Jiang Ning's fists. The blasts of air that Jiang Ning's punches made earlier continued to ring in his ears.

Only fighters who had reached grandmaster stage could make the air around them explode like that. That was real power!

It never crossed their minds that Jiang Ning would have reached this stage at this age.

"Five tigers of Jianzhou," Jiang Ning scanned them. Mountain Tiger took two steps back when Jiang Ning's gaze landed on him. His arms were useless now!

"So that's all you guys are worth."

"I thought you guys were amazing or something," Jiang Ning shook his head. His face was filled with disdain and disappointment. "You're still a little short of Ye Xinhua."

The tigers' expressions darkened when they heard Ye Xinhua's name.

Ye Xinhuo was that fighter from the north who had supposedly reached grandmaster level...wasn't he already dead?

Did he die at Jiang Ning's hands?

They only heard that Ye Xinhuo went to Donghai to challenge someone to a duel, but any other information had been sealed up by the north. They had no idea that the one who was challenged was Jiang Ning!

Apparently Ye Xinhuo had been killed by one punch from Jiang Ning!

The three of them instantly grew fearful and even felt an urge to escape.

How were they going to fight him?

And they were supposed to kill Jiang Ning?

That was impossible!

"Attack!!"

The courtyard was filled with enough blood to become a river.

The wolves were ferocious and ruthless. Nobody could defend against them with this formation technique in place.

In just a short time, more than ten of the hundred fighters had already died.

Yan Chong felt his heart tremble.

The tigers were equally terrified.

Was this what Donghai was capable of?

Was this why Donghai...was now known as a forbidden territory?

They actually thought of razing Donghai to the ground?! Were their brains broken?!

"Not attacking anymore?" Jiang Ning suddenly raised his hand when he saw that everyone was in a daze. "Then I'm going to start."

Swoosh...

Jiang Ning immediately made his move.

There was only the sound of wind and billowing dust. He was too fast!



Mountain Tiger shouted out in fear, "Be careful!"

But before he could even finish those two words, Jiang Ning was already in front of the three tigers.

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

Three punches in a row!

Each punch was more domineering than the last, and each punch was more powerful than the last!

The three tigers could barely lift their hands and couldn't do anything else. They only heard a few blasts and they were sent flying. They crashed hard against the ground, spewed a huge amount of blood from their mouths and died on the spot.

Mountain Tiger felt all his hair stand on end. "A grandmaster..."

But even a grandmaster wasn't this terrifying either!

He wanted to say that Jiang Ning was at a higher level than a grandmaster, but Jiang Ning had reached him before he could say more.

Mountain Tiger only saw a fist become larger and larger. It looked like the gates of hell opening for him.

He couldn't retaliate and could only watch as that fist landed in his face.

Just before he died, he heard a loud blast.

That was...probably the sound of his head exploding!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

All five tigers were dead!

The five tigers of Jianzhou who were so powerful and so reputable. None of them were left standing.

Yan Chong was completely terrified.

His legs trembled and he didn't even know what to say. His entire body was shaking so hard.

He looked at Jiang Ning like he was a demon. He was a vicious demon that had crawled out from the depths of hell!

"You...you..."

Those bodies on the ground were pale faced, drained of blood and completely cold. It was as if they had fallen into an ice cave.

Yan Chong's throat was dry as he kept moving backwards. He suddenly screamed and scrambled out of the back door as if he had seen a ghost.

He didn't dare to stay here anymore.

If even the five tigers had died in Jiang Ning's hands, then he was dead meat.

Jiang Ning only glanced at him. He wasn't even interested in running after him.

This sort of trash was going to die sooner or later.

He turned to see that the wolves were still raging behind him.

This formation technique had helped to improve their capabilities. They could now wield their strengths to its maximum and completely hide all their weaknesses.

There was no way these so called fighters were able to hold up against such a tremendous blast of strength.

Howls and screams filled the air.

After the five tigers died, the fighters immediately lost their fighting spirit and confidence. They broke down on the spot. If even the strongest of them all, the five tigers, had died, then what else could they do?

Soon enough, the wolves had taken all of them down.

They could only beg for mercy and couldn't fight back anymore.

"Yan Chong has made a run for it, do you want to go after him?" asked Huang Yuming quietly as he lit a cigarette for Jiang Ning.

"You think he can run away?" Jiang Ning exhaled a mouthful of smoke.

Three minutes later, besides Jiang Ning and his gang, everyone else in the courtyard were sprawled in all directions on the ground, and their blood flowed like the river...

The wolves were all hyped up.

They had understood how incredible this formation technique was, and they were so excited that they wished they could lift their heads and shout for joy.

It was amazing!

It was so powerful!

But compared to Jiang Ning, they were still a long, long way off.

Brother Gou had asked Jiang Ning before on how he could become powerful.

Jiang Ning only had two words for him: Train hard!

Constant training, training thousands of times more than an ordinary person.

They didn't know that Jiang Ning had practiced his punch a few hundred times before this punch became part of his instinct.

Jiang Ning looked around the courtyard. All of them were trembling and didn't even dare to look up, much less meet Jiang Ning's gaze.

"Come along, let's go to the Yang house."

Jiang Ning turned to leave, and all his men followed him.

There were sobs and howls in the courtyard. That sort of fear, regret and humiliation would follow them for the rest of their lives.

Meanwhile, in the Yang house.

Yang Huang and Yang Xiao had come.

Yan Chong and the five tigers were going to Donghai the next day to bring Jiang Ning's head back.

So tonight was the day they were going to step into the Yang house and take

over control of the family.

Even if Yang Dong wasn't willing to, he had no other choice.

"You two...how dare you!!"

Yang Dong slammed the table and was furious.

Yang Huang had actually ousted him.

"There's nothing I don't dare to do now. I'm here to just inform you," Yang Huang replied coldly. "Since we're father and son after all, I'll promise to take care of your living expenses as long as you step down. Otherwise..."

Yang Dong's body was trembling. He pointed a finger at Yang Huang and Yang Xiao but he couldn't get a single word out.

He was silent for a few moments and finally decided to give in.

He was old and couldn't control the Yang family forever. Besides, he wasn't able to do anything about it given the current situation.

Yang Xiao was too powerful and he couldn't fight her. And even his only son betrayed him.

"You promised that if I give you the family, you'll help me to kill Jiang Ning," said Yang Dong.

Jiang Ning had embarrassed him and made him feel humiliated. He wanted to settle this feud.

Yang Xiao laughed. She knew Yang Dong was giving in.

"Of course. Tomorrow, we'll bring Jiang Ning's head back so that you can offer it to Yang Luolin at his grave."

That was Yang Dong's last request.

She laughed, "Old man, you really cared for Yang Luolin, huh?"

"Humph."

Yang Dong didn't respond to that.

That was a son he gained in his old age, so he really doted on him.

But since he was already dead, there was nothing Yang Dong could do about it.

It was enough that he could avenge Yang Luolin.

"Jiang Ning...I'm going to offer your head to my son!" said Yang Dong through clenched teeth.

Yang Huang and Yang Xiao couldn't be bothered with him anymore. They had a gleeful smile when they heard that Yang Dong had given in.

They had finally taken the family back.

The almighty Yang family represented power and position in Jianzhou!

With the inclusion of Yang Xiao's influence, the Yang family could become a top tier family of the southeast region and nobody in this entire region would dare to touch them.

"Congratulations, Dad," Yang Xiao purposely said to her father in front of Yang Dong. "You have won back the title of being the head of the Yang family."

Yang Huang laughed and nodded.

Neither of them seemed to care about Yang Dong's expression.

Now they had gotten the Yang family. Then tomorrow, when Jiang Ning's head was delivered to them, Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory would cease to exist.

"Our Yang family will definitely rise and become a top tier family!" Yang Huang said excitedly. "I can already see how the Yang family will eventually become an invincible power in the southeast region, and nobody will dare to make trouble for us!"

He clenched his fists.

He could already see how everyone in the southeast region would be fearful of him!

They would be reverent towards the Yang family!

They would be nervous and polite in front of him!

He couldn't wait!

He even thought about celebrating once more the next day.

"Did you guys drink too much? Need an extra plate of peanuts? What nonsense are you spouting now?"

Suddenly.

There was a voice coming from outside the door and it sounded like it was teasing them.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

All three in the house turned their heads. Who on earth was here at this hour?

Yang Xiao was leaning against her chair, but when she saw the face at the door, she immediately bounced up and there was murder in her eyes.

"Jiang Ning!"

She never thought that Jiang Ning would come to Jianzhou tonight and pay a visit to the Yang house.

"Jiang Ning! You're Jiang Ning!"

Yang Dong's eyes turned red when he heard this name. So this man was the one who killed Yang Luolin?

He actually dared to come to Jianzhou?

"That's me," Jiang Ning nodded. "Looks like you guys don't really welcome me around here."

He clapped his hands together. "But I'm here to send my birthday wishes to the Old Master."

Yang Dong and the rest were shocked. Yang Dong was indeed going to celebrate his birthday soon, but obviously nobody was in the mood to celebrate it at all. Jiang Ning actually knew about this and even brought a present?

Yang Dong looked up to see Number 9 and Number 13 carry a large clock in.

DOOOONG.

The huge clock resounded loudly as it landed on the floor, and the vibration made everyone's ears hurt.

"Just a small gesture, I hope you like it," Jiang Ning said with a smile.

Yang Dong's expression darkened, then he turned purple and finally became red in the face from rage as he looked at that large clock.

"You...you're asking to die!"

Yang Dong was furious!

Jiang Ning had given him a clock!

Jiang Ning was telling him that his time was up!

He spat a mouthful of blood out and couldn't even stand properly anymore. He collapsed back into his chair and gripped the armrest tightly.

"Kill him! Hurry up and kill him!" he started shouting at Yang Xiao as his expression became threatening. "Kill him now! I'll give you the family, I'll give it all to you!"

After Yang Dong finished roaring, his entire body went weak.

Jiang Ning stood where he was. He still had a faint smile on his face and didn't seem angry at all.

"Seems like the Old Master doesn't like this present very much," he sighed. "What a waste of my effort."

"Jiang Ning!" Yang Xiao laughed coldly like she had gone mad. "You actually dared to come to Jianzhou? You're really tired of living!"

"I suppose you don't know that I've already arranged for my men to go to Donghai to chop your head off!"

Yang Xiao laughed loudly and she was so excited.

She thought she had to wait till tomorrow night before she could see Jiang Ning's head in front of her.

But to her surprise!

Jiang Ning had actually come right to her door step with just these few men. Did he really think that he could step into Jianzhou anytime he wanted to?

"Since you've come all the way to my doorstep, then I'm taking your head right now!"

Yang Huang was equally excited next to her.

Since Jiang Ning had come here, then they could settle everything tonight.

He thought that Jiang Ning was some impressive guy who was really smart and powerful, but in the end he turned out to be a reckless fool.

He had come to Jianzhou directly and came here to die.

Wasn't that foolish?

Yang Xiao immediately took out her phone to call Yan Chong to bring all his men to the Yang house.



She stared at Jiang Ning while making the call, just in case Jiang Ning suddenly made an attack.

But Jiang Ning continued to stand there and calmly looked at her.

He didn't seem to be afraid at all.

Ring...ring...

The phone kept ringing for a long time but nobody picked up.

What the heck was this Yan Chong doing?

She had told him to arrange for the five tigers as well as pump up the fighters to raze Donghai to the ground and kill Jiang Ning tomorrow!

"No worries, no hurry, keep calling," Jiang Ning said as he pulled a chair over and sat down. Huang Yuming walked over to Yang Dong and took his teapot over to pour a cup of tea for Jiang Ning.

It was as if this was Jiang Ning's house and not the Yang house.

Yang Huang's expression changed a little. He had a bad feeling about this.

Jiang Ning was too calm. His steadiness made him feel a little afraid.

The men with him stood there and didn't say anything, but they all gave off a ferocious air!

It was as if he was in a forest and facing frightening wild beasts.

Those eyes staring at him made him feel like he was going to be swallowed up whole.

Ring...ring...ring...

Yang Xiao's expression looked a little nasty as well as she dialed Yan Chong again.

He finally picked up!

There was a look of joy on her face.

"Yan Chong! Where are you!" Yang Xiao yelled loudly, "Bring those men over..."

Before she could finish her sentence, she could hear hurried footsteps and heavy breathing outside the house. Yan Chong had run over to the Yang house!

"Boss, I'm at the Yang house, all of you have to...have to hurry up and run away quickly...that...that Jiang Ning...is here..."

Yan Chong hurriedly ran into the house and the first thing he saw was Jiang Ning sitting there and drinking tea leisurely.

He felt like he had been struck by lightning. The phone in his hand fell to the floor immediately.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Jiang...Jiang Ning!"

Yan Chong's voice was trembling and he fell to his knees with a thud.

He couldn't get through to Yang Xiao's phone earlier, so he came running all the way here to tell them to run, but Jiang Ning got here earlier than him!

They were doomed!

They were all doomed!

The image of how the tigers had been slaughtered by Jiang Ning earlier started replaying in his mind once more...

That demon that had crawled out from the depths of hell was now sitting in front of him!

Yan Chong suddenly started laughing foolishly and there was a terrible smell coming from his pants.

Yang Huang and Yang Xiao's expressions changed.

They didn't know how Yan Chong had become like this. Why was he so terrified when he saw Jiang Ning? He actually peed his pants.

Yang Huang's throat went dry while Yang Xiao stared straight at Jiang Ning. Her palms felt a little cold and started to tremble slightly.

"This is Jianzhou! The five tigers of Jianzhou..."

"...are dead," Jiang Ning finished her sentence calmly. "I killed them."

Yang Xiao's body shook violently. Yan Chong trembled even harder. They had been killed right in front of him!

It was too terrifying!

He couldn't help trembling again when he replayed that scene in his mind.

"The illegal circle of Jianzhou..."

"...all the strong fighters are gone," Jiang Ning continued.

"Your people, your men. Every one that has some skill are no longer standing."

"Are you feeling despair now?"

Jiang Ning looked at Yang Xiao and watched her expression slowly stiffen and was filled with disbelief.

They were all gone?

The best of Jianzhou's illegal circle was gone just like that?

When did that happen? How did Jiang Ning do that?

How was it possible?

Yang Xiao felt her body go numb. She couldn't believe it at all. She looked at Yan Chong, but Yan Chong kept shaking and his lips were trembling as he murmured, "They're all dead...all dead..."

BOOM!

She felt this crash of thunder land on her head.

She was suddenly filled with terror.

She was now in despair!

How did it become like this? She had just gotten her hands on the Yang family and now she was going to lose everything in the blink of an eye?

She hadn't even had the chance to feel happy yet and now...everything was gone?

"You Yangs are really domineering," Jiang Ning laughed coldly. "Lin Group has been expanding steadily but your family tried to sabotage us and even tried to take us down. Yang Luolin dared to be disrespectful to my woman, so I turned him into fertilizer. And what did you say? You wanted to slash Yuzhen's face?"

Jiang Ning's face was suddenly covered in frost!

The temperature suddenly seemed to have gone down by more than ten degrees, and Yang Xiao shuddered.

"You...you dare to kill me?!" Yang Xiao clenched her teeth and her face grew threatening. "I have someone in the north backing me!"

Jiang Ning scoffed. Someone in the north backing her?

Zhou Hua had a backer in the north. Lu Qian had a backer in the north too. Even Master Fu had a backer in the north. But so what?

Until now, nobody had dared to seek revenge.

Jiang Ning got up and walked over to Yang Xiao. She took two steps back out of fright, but didn't dare to keep moving back after that.

PAK!

Jiang Ning suddenly slapped her across the face. The skin on Yang Xiao's face instantly split open.

Her face had changed in shape.

Her skull was probably fractured.

"AHH!" Yang Xiao yelled as she flew out. She clutched her face and howled in pain.

"What are you trying to do!" Yang Huang immediately ran over to protect her, but Jiang Ning kicked him and sent him flying without even looking at him.

"Trying to harm my woman? Even if you were a god, I'd kill you!" Jiang Ning spat out coldly.

Yang Xiao couldn't say anything. Her jaw was crooked and she curled up on the floor and trembled.

Yang Dong and Yang Huang had pale faces. Besides fear, all they had was regret. Why...why did they offend Jiang Ning?

Why did this stupid Yang Luolin offend Jiang Ning in the first place!

Even Yang Dong suddenly felt that Yang Luolin deserved to die. He really did!

If he wasn't around, the Yang family would never have offended such a frightening person and they wouldn't be wiped out now.

"After tonight, the Yang family of Jianzhou will be no more," declared Jiang Ning.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

In one night, the Yang family disappeared.

Nobody knew why and nobody knew what happened in the night.

When they saw how the estate where Yan Chong and the five tigers used to stay in was flowing with blood, the entire Jianzhou was shaken up.

The illegal circle of Jianzhou had just disappeared overnight.

The famous five tigers of Jianzhou had all died terribly!

Their best hundred were either dead or barely alive.

Yang Xiao, the Madwoman of Jianzhou, was completely disfigured. Some said they saw her on the streets running around like a crazy person, and some said that she had been killed and thrown into the river.

There were also some who said that Yang Xiao had been turned into fertilizer.

The Yang family fell overnight. The companies under them all closed down and suffered tremendous losses.

Jianzhou was really shaken up.

There were a few people who knew a few things and could guess who did this. Nobody said it out loud, but they were quite sure it was that place.

Donghai!

Donghai, the forbidden territory!

The ones that the Yang family had offended lately were from Donghai. They heard that they had really offended those people in Donghai and nearly got them killed.

This was revenge from that forbidden territory!

Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory was now carved on everyone's heart.

There was a rumor among the martial arts world that nobody dared to bully or offend anyone from Donghai.

They were afraid that they would bring trouble upon themselves.

After the Yang family collapsed, everything that they represented also followed suit. The oppression and pressure the Yang family had placed on other

businesses was gone.

There were so many bosses who shouted for joy, saying that God was fair after all, and exterminated the overbearing Yang family.

There were so many people who had been victims of the Yang family who were now kneeling on the ground, looking up at the sky and raising their hands high in gratefulness.

The Yang family was no more in the southeast region, and this was also a clear reminder to all the families who were as overbearing and unreasonable as the Yang family that good begets good, and evil begets evil!

Meanwhile,

Jiang Ning, the one who shook up the entire region, was still lying in bed and sleeping peacefully.

The blanket carried Lin Yuzhen's fragrance, so Jiang Ning had a good sleep.

"You lazy pig!"

Someone pulled the blanket off. Jiang Ning opened his eyes to see Lin Yuzhen standing next to the bed with one hand on her waist and the other tugging at the blanket.

"Do you know what time it is? Aren't you going to send me to work?"

Jiang Ning got up and rubbed his eyes. "Isn't it the weekend?"

"I have to work on weekends too."

Lin Yuzhen glared angrily at this true boss of Lin Group.

He had slept so soundly and was even asking her why she had to work weekends.

"This is not good. You'll be overworked at this rate," Jiang Ning rubbed his chin. "Why don't I shut Lin Group down? I don't want you to be too tired."

"What nonsense are you talking about?"

Lin Yuzhen covered Jiang Ning's mouth.

This idiot was too childish, wasn't it?

He just set up Lin Group when he wanted to, and now he wanted to close it

down just because he wanted to?

Could he even close it now?

Lin Group was expanding rapidly and had so many staff now. It was getting bigger and stronger by the day.

Besides, Lin Group contributed so much to Donghai's community and infrastructure. So did he think the citizens of Donghai would agree to the company shutting down?

If they thought that Lin Group shut down due to cashflow problems, they might pool their money together just to help Lin Group tide over this crisis!

"Then what should I do? I don't want my wife to work too hard," Jiang Ning held Lin Yuzhen's hands and said with great concern, "It really pains my heart."

Lin Yuzhen's face turned red.

Even though she had accepted her relationship with Jiang Ning and they were sharing the bed at night.

Even though they hadn't done anything else a husband and wife should but...it seems they were just missing the perfect chance.

She would still feel shy and her face would still redden. She was so adorable that Jiang Ning felt an urge to kiss her.

"No."

Lin Yuzhen shook her head with a determined look on her face. "I said that I'm going to become an outstanding woman. One who can bravely stand by your side."

"Hubby, don't shut Lin Group down, please? Pretty please?"

She started to whine adorably.

Jiang Ning felt his entire body tremble.

He couldn't hold up against this tactic.

"Sure, anything my wife says!"

Jiang Ning got up, changed and washed up. Lin Yuzhen had already reheated breakfast.



"Mum and Dad have gone out shopping since it's so rare that they have time like that together," said Lin Yuzhen.

The last twenty years had been very tough on them. Now, they could be happy and enjoy their old age.

And all this was possible because of Jiang Ning.

This alone was enough to move Lin Yuzhen already.

Jiang Ning knew that Su Mei and Lin Wen had gone out so that he could have more time alone with Lin Yuzhen.

After all, the house was quite small, and it could get a little squeezey with all four of them around.

Since Lin Yuzhen didn't mind sleeping with him anymore, Jiang Ning gobbled his food and dragged Lin Yuzhen out.

He started the car and drove out of the estate, but he wasn't headed for the office.

"Where are you going?" asked Lin Yuzhen curiously. "I have to go to work."

"There's always work to be done, so let's do something important first."

The car drove quickly and soon arrived at a real estate sales office for a residential estate that was newly up for sale. They had put up advertisements in every street and every corner of the city, so it was hard for Jiang Ning to miss.

He parked the car, then brought Lin Yuzhen in.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Some of the sales agents noticed they had customers, so one of them immediately went up and greeted them politely, "Hello sir, madam, are you interested in buying a house?"

Jiang Ning walked straight to the scale model in the sales office and pointed at a row of bungalows. He asked Lin Yuzhen, "Which one do you like?"

"Wha-?"

"Choose one quickly. Don't you still want to go to work?"

Jiang Ning laughed, then turned to the sales agent, "Do you have any furnished ones? The type that you can move into immediately."

"A furnished house? Er...yes! Yes we do!"

She was still in shock. Didn't he want to take a look at the house first?

Or at least ask a few questions? Other customers often asked about the layout of the house, or the structure of the house and all sorts of other questions. They usually asked very specific questions, so as an agent, she had everything memorized well.

But Jiang Ning now asked her if there was any house he could just move into right now.

"I'll take this house then. Here's my card!"

"What?"

Wasn't that decision made too quickly?

Jiang Ning had spent less than 30 seconds in this office.

Also, he had pointed to a bungalow. A standalone one.

The sales agent was still stunned and thought that Jiang Ning was joking. But Jiang Ning didn't look like he was joking.

"Sir, is this the one you want?" she quickly confirmed this with him.

Even Lin Yuzhen wanted to confirm this with him. This was about buying a house, not random vegetables!

She knew Jiang Ning was rich, but this was a bungalow they were talking about! A standalone one too!

"Wait a minute!" Jiang Ning suddenly raised his hand.

And frowned slightly.

The sales agent thought he had regrets now.

This particular bungalow cost a total of \$13 million or so with everything included. Even if he was really rich, he didn't have to act this boastful either.

"Mum likes a quiet environment, so if the neighbours are too noisy, it'll affect her mood."

Jiang Ning looked at the scale model again and started murmuring his thoughts out loud. He pointed to a piece of empty land. "Mum could plant some vegetables and some flowers on this piece of land. She'll love it."

"Alright then."

Jiang Ning took out a card. "I'm taking this entire row including this empty piece of land."

"Wha-?"

Both Lin Yuzhen and the sales agent gaped at the same time.

That row was a total of ten houses!

Was Jiang Ning kidding?

He bought all ten houses because he was afraid that the neighbours might be too noisy for Su Mei.

He even wanted an empty piece of land so that Su Mei had a place to plant vegetables and flowers?

"Hubby..."

"Sir..."

Both of them were feeling dizzy wondering if Jiang Ning had gone mad.

"Swipe my card now!" Jiang Ning ordered the sales agent in a loud voice. There was no need to say more.

After seeing Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen out, the sales agent was bowing at a 90 degree angle already.

All her colleagues were equally stunned.

After being in this line for so many years, they had seen their fair share of wealthy people. But they had never seen one THIS wealthy!

Ten bungalows was \$130 million!

He said he wanted to buy the whole row and he really did. He had no idea how many people became excited the moment he ordered the sales agent to swipe his card.

What was the definition of a tycoon?

That was the definition of a tycoon!

The sales agent hadn't even had enough time to pour Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen a glass of water and this entire transaction was done.

After calculating his commission, she started laughing foolishly to herself. She slapped herself a few times and started cheering when she felt the pain.

"I'm rich! I'm RICH!!"

She was just wondering how she was going to cover the costs of her wedding, but now she was at the top of the world! The commission alone was more than \$2 million!

All the sales agents stood in one row and continued to see Jiang Ning out.

One was so excited she was going mad. The rest were so envious they were going mad.

Beep beep!

A black car stopped at the entrance. Their manager had arrived.

When he saw all his sales agents standing there in a daze, he immediately started shouting angrily at them, "What are all of you doing? Don't you need to sell the houses? It's not easy to sell those bungalows, so go get some customers! Why are all of you standing here and daydreaming?!"

"Manager, the bungalows have all been sold."

"All been sold? What nonsense are you talking about? Are you pulling a fast one on me? Those bungalows..."

The manager couldn't speak anymore when he saw the receipt.

When he saw that these ten bungalows were bought by one person and paid in full, he couldn't help but let out a scream.

"Everything!" He couldn't believe it at all. His voice was trembling as he asked, "Who...who bought them?"

When he saw that the properties were registered under Lin Yuzhen, he nearly jumped in fright.

"CEO Lin!" He wiped the sweat off his forehead. "That's CEO Lin from Lin Group!"

This was no small matter.

Lin Yuzhen from Lin Group had bought their houses but as a manager, he wasn't the one who showed them around and took care of them. If his boss found out, he would be in trouble.

That was Lin Yuzhen!

He couldn't think about anything else now. He grabbed the receipt and went to look for his boss.

If Lin Group hadn't attracted investors into Donghai, his boss would never have had the chance to develop his real estate business into Donghai. They always wanted to find a chance to thank Lin Group and thank Lin Yuzhen, but Lin Yuzhen had come to support their business instead.

This was an important matter and he had to report it to his boss immediately!

Meanwhile.

Lin Yuzhen was in the car and feeling a little numb.

The last time she asked Jiang Ning how much money he had, he said he didn't know and only knew it was enough to spend.

He just spent more than \$100 million without batting an eyelid. Was that just enough to spend?

It was already more than enough for them to stay in one bungalow, but Jiang Ning bought ten of them.

On top of buying those ten, he even bought an additional piece of land just so that Su Mei could plant some vegetables and flowers for fun.

If Su Mei wanted to keep fish, was Jiang Ning going to dig a pond for her too?

"Hubby, if you keep spending money on my family like this, I really think I can't pay you back anymore."

Jiang Ning didn't even turn his head. "So you have to use yourself as payment."

Lin Yuzhen exhaled deeply. "Looks like that's really the only way."

No! She had to work hard and make Lin Group bigger and stronger! She was going to work hard to earn money and become more powerful than Jiang Ning! Richer than Jiang Ning!

She was going to let him have a taste of how money could make him feel numb! HUMPH!

After going upstairs with Lin Yuzhen, Jiang Ning walked out of her office. Lin Yuzhen had no idea what he wanted to do, but she got down to work anyway.

In the office area.

Jiang Ning walked over to Xiaozhao's seat and knocked on her table.

Xiaozhao was busy doing work. When she saw it was Jiang Ning, she sadly pulled her drawer open and took a bag of potato chips out.

"Brother Ning, it's my last bag of chips. Can't you leave some for me?"

"Who says I'm here for your tidbits?"

Jiang Ning rolled his eyes but snatched the bag of chips anyway. He immediately tore it open and started eating as he said to her, "Call all the young employees of the various departments who have been doing well to report to CEO Lin's office."

"Wha-?"

"Go now, otherwise I'm going to finish your chips."

"Yes sir!"

In no time.

Eight people stood inside Lin Yuzhen's office. They were young employees from the various departments who had performed well recently.

They had no idea why Jiang Ning had called them over.

They were a little nervous and a little anxious.

Everyone knew that the real boss of Lin Group was Jiang Ning.

They knew that Jiang Ning could be friendly and took good care of the staff. But they also knew that he was powerful and fearsome!

"Lin Group's expansion can't count on just the Chairman and the CEO," Jiang Ning went straight to the point. "Even with the directors of the various departments, that's not enough. So I need more hands to do the work."

"We've already cleared all the obstacles in the southeast region, so after Lin Group has stabilized itself in Shengcheng, we'll move into the southeast region. All of you know this, right?"

All eight of them nodded.

"CEO Lin has to take care of the big picture and she can't take care of every nitty gritty detail. So there are many things that I want to pass to you guys."

All eight of them felt their breathing quicken.

This was a heavy responsibility!


This was the heavy responsibility of expanding the company!

It was a job that came with great pressure and great difficulty. It was a challenge, but it also carried risks.

"Brother Ning, do you think...we can really do it?" asked one of them who was bolder and normally talked to Jiang Ning.

"Whether you're really able to or not depends on yourselves," Jiang Ning smiled as he looked at Lin Yuzhen, who just realized what he was trying to do. "In any case, CEO Lin has told me that all of you are definitely able to."

"The southeast market is right there, so you guys can pick which city you want to go into. I will provide you with just two things," Jiang Ning tapped a finger on the table. "One. Every time you complete Lin Group's expansion into a city, you can tell me how much money you want as a reward. You can even ask for a few million, no problem. Two, your annual salary will double."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

OOH...

All eight of them gasped at the same time.

A few million as a reward!

The salary that Lin Group gave its staff was already the highest in all of Donghai.

And now Jiang Ning was offering even more on top of that!

"If you can help to share CEO Lin's burden, then you would have contributed greatly to Lin Group, so this sort of reward isn't really that much actually. If you think you can take on this responsibility, then you can go and make preparations now."

Jiang Ning leaned against the sofa and picked up the potato chips he took from Xiaozhao earlier.

All eight of them immediately stood as straight as they could.

It wasn't just because Jiang Ning trusted them enough to offer them such a huge reward, but more because Jiang Ning had treated them as workers who were the most important to Lin Group.

"Brother Ning! Don't worry! I will not disappoint the trust you have in me!"

"Brother Ning, rewards and all are not important. Sharing CEO Lin's burden is my duty!"

"Brother Ning, I'll give it all I have and get those markets!"

All eight of them were filled with excitement and motivation.

A chance to be trusted like this and given the responsibility of opening a new market despite being young wasn't something that came by easily.

Just that reason alone was worth their full effort!

"Sure, I'll wait for good news from all of you. I'll give you guys a toast at the annual company dinner."

With those words, the eight of them became even more excited.

Jiang Ning wanted to give them a toast!

In order to be able to clink glasses with Jiang Ning in front of the whole



company, they were going to go all out!

Even if they were exhausted, they were going to put in their greatest effort!

Lin Yuzhen only spoke up after the eight of them had left her office.

She knew that Jiang Ning got them to share her burden because he didn't want her to be so busy.

"This is how you groom talents. You have to let them go out and try too. The company is one body made up of many people, and should not rely on you alone. Understand?"

Lin Yuzhen nodded.

Jiang Ning stuffed one potato chip into Lin Yuzhen's mouth and whispered, "Is it tasty? I saw that Xiaozhao actually has one more bag inside her drawer."

Lin Yuzhen couldn't help but laugh when she saw how Jiang Ning looked so serious over potato chips.

She forgot everything she wanted to say earlier.

She snorted and nearly sprayed the potato chip in her mouth onto Jiang Ning, so she quickly covered her mouth.

"You only know how to snatch tidbits from my staff!"

But then she reached for another as she couldn't resist eating more. "But it's really yummy."

Just then, someone knocked on her door.

Lin Yuzhen allowed the person outside to come in. Xiaozhao walked in to see Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen sitting on the sofa and eating her potato chips and nearly wanted to complain.

Those were her chips!

"CEO Lin, CEO Wan from Harmony View Real Estate is here to see you."

Lin Yuzhen was surprised. Lin Group didn't work with any real estate company in her memory. They were in the pharmaceutical and beauty industry.

"Harmony View?" She suddenly remembered. That was the real estate company where Jiang Ning bought those ten bungalows from.

"Let him in."

CEO Wan from Harmony View Real Estate was ushered in shortly after.

"Good morning, CEO Lin, Mr Jiang!" CEO Wan was very polite and bowed slightly as he greeted them.

In Donghai, all these investors knew about Lin Group. Everyone knew who Lin Yuzhen was, and of course, everyone knew Jiang Ning!

He was like a god in Donghai.

"CEO Wan, have a seat." Lin Yuzhen got up and poured a glass of water for CEO Wan. She smiled and asked, "I'm not sure why you're here to see me?"

CEO Wan was so shocked that Lin Yuzhen had served him. He took the glass of water with both hands before taking a seat.

"I just found out that Mr Jiang and CEO Lin bought properties from my sales office. My subordinates don't know who the two of you are and didn't take good care of both of you. I feel bad about it, so I quickly rushed over to make it up to both of you."

Jiang Ning didn't say anything, while Lin Yuzhen burst out laughing.

"That's alright."

The staff didn't know who they were, so there was only so much they would do to take care of them. Besides, it took less than five minutes for Jiang Ning to walk in until the transaction was completed, so the most they could do was drink a glass of water.

CEO Wan smiled, "Thank you for being so understanding, CEO Lin."

He pulled out information on the ten bungalows as well as a debit card and placed everything on the table.

"CEO Lin, my company had a chance to expand into Donghai thanks to Lin Group, and especially because of Chairman Lin's support," CEO Wan explained with a smile. "So I would like to give these ten bungalows to Mr Jiang and CEO Lin as a token of my appreciation."

He knew that money wasn't a problem for Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen, but he really wanted to show them how grateful he was.

Lin Yuzhen was a little stunned. She didn't expect CEO Wan to come here to do this.

She didn't know what to say so she turned to Jiang Ning.

"What would others think if you gave them to me? What if others think that I have no money?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning wasn't like most people who would refuse politely.

This response made CEO Wan immediately look a little nervous.

That wasn't what he meant at all.

"No Mr Jiang, that's not what I meant. I just..."

"That's not what you meant, but if others found out about it, that's how they'd think. Otherwise they'd think that I bully others and managed to force you into giving me these properties. Can you imagine how damaging it would be to my reputation?"

CEO Wan became even more anxious. He quickly stood up and tried to explain, but he couldn't find the words and nothing came out.

"Business is business, so it's no good for anyone if we go against the rules. We appreciate your good intentions," Jiang Ning waved his hand. "CEO Wan, if you want to expand further within Donghai, then continue to build more properties that are of high quality and design so that the people here can enjoy good housing. As long as you're a business with a conscience, I can guarantee that your business in Donghai will become more and more prosperous."

CEO Wan realized that Jiang Ning wasn't angry or blaming him. Jiang Ning was reminding him!

He immediately stood up straight and replied with great respect, "I will definitely remember all that Mr Jiang has taught me today!"

"That's great. I'll thank you in advance on behalf of the citizens of Donghai."

Jiang Ning then held out the half eaten bag of potato chips at CEO Wan and said with a smile, "Try these. They're pretty tasty."

CEO Wan was in a daze as he took the chips with both hands and his eyes were watery.

Jiang Ning gave this to him!

Jiang Ning asked him to try these!

He had to frame this bag of chips up when he got home.

He thanked the two of them profusely and left with the bag of chips.

CEO Wan was nearly fifty years old, but he was so polite and reverent in front of Jiang Ning, like a student before his teacher. It was amazing that he could even

be so excited over Jiang Ning giving him a bag of half eaten chips.

Lin Yuzhen knew that her husband was someone who really made everyone around him admire him.

"You've given those chips away, but I've only eaten a few pieces," she remarked deliberately.

"That's easy to settle."

Jiang Ning took Lin Yuzhen's hand and laughed, "Let's go grab a bag from Xiaozhao! She's got one more hiding in her drawer!"

.....

Meanwhile, in a hotel in the heart of Shenghai, a major city known all over the world.

There were several men who were all red in the face in a private room after many rounds of drinking. They had been emboldened by alcohol and started getting touchy feely.

PAK!

Suddenly the sound of a slap made everyone in the private room fall silent.

"Ye Qingwu! How dare you slap me!"

A plump man instantly glared at her angrily. "You're just a bloody singer! Don't think I don't dare to kill you!"

Ye Qingwu's face was filled with fear as she quickly took a few steps back and ran for the door. She saw people coming after her, so she quickly pulled the door open and ran out.

She ran back to her own hotel room and splashed cold water on her face, but she couldn't stop the tears from flowing.

"Qingwu!" Her manager caught up with her and his face was filled with worry. "Why were you so rash! He isn't someone you can afford to offend!"

Ye Qingwu clenched her teeth.

"I'm a singer, not a hostess!"

There was nothing the manager could do either. Artistes like Ye Qingwu couldn't avoid going for such drinking parties.

It was even harder to handle those who came with ill intentions.

Every guest at these drinking parties had influence in the entertainment circle. If an artiste offended any of them, it would not just affect the artiste's future in the industry, but it could also cost the artiste his life.

Even if you were Ye Qingwu, one of the most popular singers in the country right now. She was a sweet looking singer with countless fans.

But the prettier you were, the more dangerous the entertainment circle was.

"But we really can't afford to offend that Young Master. Not even our boss can afford to." The manager didn't know what else to do. He looked at Ye Qingwu. "Why don't you go back and apologize? Maybe he'll let you off?"

Ye Qingwu looked at her own manager and there was a sad look on her face.

"No," Ye Qingwu said with determination. "The one who should apologize is him! I will not apologize!"

"He'll kill you!" the manager said anxiously.

DOONG! DOONG! DOONG!

Someone started knocking violently on the hotel room door.

"Open the door! Open the door right now! Ye Qingwu is inside, right? Come out and apologize to our Young Master right now!"

Ye Qingwu's face paled. They had caught up with her so quickly?

These idiots were really trying to push her into a corner.

"Qingwu! Hurry up!" Her manager responded quickly to the situation. "Hide yourself, I'll distract them while you run!"

"Where can I run to?"

There was nowhere safe in this country. The Young Master she offended was from a very influential family and she really couldn't afford to offend him at all.

"Go to Donghai! Go to Donghai!" the manager quickly instructed her. He suddenly remembered that he heard that there was a city called Donghai that was allegedly a forbidden territory and nobody was allowed to make trouble there!

Ye Qingwu could only make her escape, then come back after her company had settled this matter. If they caught her now, she didn't even dare to think about what might happen to her.

The knocking on the door became louder and louder.

Ye Qingwu's face paled and she quickly hid under the bed. She grabbed her bag as well and trembled.

BAM!

The door was kicked open and a few men rushed into the room.

"Hello, hello gentlemen! Qingwu isn't here, what are you trying to do?" The manager smiled awkwardly. "I'm looking for her too! This silly girl is so immature!"

"Humph, where does she think she can hide after offending Young Master Su?"

"Yes yes, it's my fault for not teaching her well. Don't worry, I'm going to search for Qingwu now. Once I find her, I'll send her to Young Master Su!"

"Move aside!"

They ignored him and pushed him aside as they started searching the room.

They looked around and didn't see Ye Qingwu. They noticed that the clothes on the bed were a mess and her bag was gone, so they guessed that she had made a run for it.

The manager continued to stand at the door and didn't dare to say anything even though he was angry. He secretly breathed a sigh of relief in his heart when he saw the men walk towards the door without finding Ye Qingwu.

"I'm warning you, Young Master Su is very angry! If this Ye Qingwu doesn't apologize to him, then it won't just be the end of this singer, it'll be the end of your company too! HA!"

After warning the manager, the men left.

The manager quickly locked the door behind him and ran over to the bed.

"Don't come out!" he whispered. "They're definitely still outside guarding the room, I'll find a way to make them leave this place and you find a chance to get out of here, understand?"

Ye Qingwu didn't dare to say anything.

"Go to Donghai and hide for a few days. I'll think of a way to settle this with boss, then I'll pick you up when everything's safe."

After that, the manager left the room. After a long time, Ye Qingwu finally dared to climb out from under the bed. Since it was already late at night, she took the chance to escape. She covered herself well, bought a ticket and flew straight to Donghai.

.....

Meanwhile,

Lin Yuzhen was curled up in Jiang Ning's arms and felt a little warm.

It was nearly May and the weather was warming up. Su Mei changed their blanket because she said she was afraid they might perspire in the night.

She seemed to be hinting at something else.

Why would they perspire in their sleep if they didn't engage in any vigorous activity?

"CEO Wan says that his staff have tidied up the bungalows and we can move in tomorrow," said Lin Yuzhen in a quiet voice. "When you told Mum about it today, she frowned, but I can tell that she's really happy about it."

How could she not be happy? She had spent a large part of her life in this rundown estate and now she could move into a bigger house. It was a standalone bungalow with a compound, and she even had space to plant vegetables and flowers.

"As long as Mum is happy," Jiang Ning replied with a smile. "She's suffered all her life, so it's high time she gets to enjoy life."

"Thank you hubby." Lin Yuzhen shifted herself closer to Jiang Ning and it became even warmer. "There are times where I can hardly believe it. It's like I'm dreaming. How did I end up with a good husband like you?"

"I can't believe it either."

"You can't believe what?"

"I can't believe how you ended up with such a good husband," Jiang Ning teased her.

Lin Yuzhen's face turned red and kicked Jiang Ning aside. "It's very warm! Go to bed now!"



Jiang Ning couldn't do anything.

But it was pretty warm if they slept like this.

Looks like the room wasn't large enough.

"I'll leave the house moving to you tomorrow, I'll go to the office myself," Lin Yuzhen spoke again after a while. "I can drive."

Jiang Ning nodded.

Lin Yuzhen's driving skills were decent. And he didn't have to worry as long as she was within Donghai. He always had someone protecting her from afar.

Jiang Ning was never lax about ensuring Lin Yuzhen's safety.

Nothing else happened for the rest of the night.

They weren't awoken by the alarm clock the next day. They were woken up by Su Mei's excitement outside.

It had taken them quite a long time to pack everything the night before. Su Mei had sorted out the things that she had to bring along and the things that she didn't have to already. But after waking up the next morning, she started to feel that there were more things with sentimental value that she wanted to bring to the new house.

She knew that the family didn't lack money, but there were many things that couldn't be bought with money.

Lin Yuzhen yawned. "Mum, you're up so early."

"Early? It's already 6AM!" Su Mei glared at her. "Jiang Ning is often very tired out so it's fine for him to sleep in. Why are you getting so lazy too?"

Lin Yuzhen wanted to cry. How was she being lazy?

But she knew that Su Mei doted on Jiang Ning like he was her own son and resistance was futile. She just carried on yawning and went to wash up.

After breakfast, Lin Yuzhen drove herself to the office.

After Su Mei washed all the cutlery, she became even more excited. It was time to move house!

Huang Yuming had already arranged for men to help them to move. He wasn't going to leave moving house to Su Mei and her family.

"It's been hard on everyone!" Su Mei thanked the men sincerely and prepared lots of food and drinks for them so that these men would feel appreciated and more motivated.

Even though these men had actually fought for the right to help Jiang Ning move house!

"Your dad and Yuzhen are busy and can't help out. I'm so glad these boys are around. Otherwise I don't know when two of us are going to finish moving everything," said Su Mei with a big smile after getting into the truck.

Jiang nodded and turned to the driver, "After we're done here, bring your brothers out for a good meal."

"Yes Big Boss!"

Meanwhile,

This was the first time Lin Yuzhen was driving to the office.

She was still a little nervous and used both hands to hold onto the steering wheel. She didn't dare to look elsewhere at all. The way she kept her eyes on the front of the car and seemed so cautious made her look like a typical female driver.

"We're almost there, just another three traffic lights and we'll be there," she murmured to herself. "It's not so hard to drive."

This first drive went pretty smoothly.

Once the light turned green, Lin Yuzhen drove along slowly. She had to turn right soon, so she checked her rear mirror to see that there were no cars behind her, then put out her signal in preparation to turn right.

Then when she looked back in front, she suddenly realized someone was crossing the road!

"AHH!!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Yuzhen immediately panicked and hit the brakes. Her car wasn't travelling at high speed, but she still knocked into the pedestrian.

Her face instantly paled as she turned on the hazard lights and ran out of the car while her heart pounded nonstop.

"Are you...are you alright?" Lin Yuzhen's face was filled with worry. The lady she had knocked into was wearing a large cap and sunglasses and it covered nearly her entire face.

She probably hadn't noticed that the car was about to turn right.

"I...I'm fine."

Ye Qingwu was wearing a pair of high heels. She put them back on properly and tried to stand, but there was a pain in her ankle.

She bit her lips slightly and whimpered in pain. Lin Yuzhen became even more anxious.

"I'm sorry! I'm so sorry! I didn't see you! I'm really very sorry! Let me send you to the hospital!"

"I'm really fine, don't worry. I didn't notice your car either, so it's also my fault."

Ye Qingwu was really quite sorry too. She was wearing a cap and sunglasses so she didn't notice the car coming either. She felt that she should bear the greater responsibility.

She felt a little awkward seeing how this lady who knocked into her seemed so anxious and worried.

Ye Qingwu had reached a hotel very late the night before. After hiding for the entire night, she wanted to go out very early in the morning to grab a bite, but ended up in a car accident in the end.

She didn't dare to attract any unnecessary attention and quickly tried to stand and walk away, but her ankle hurt too much and she couldn't even stand.

"You're not fine at all! Your foot is injured! I'll send you to the hospital right now!" Lin Yuzhen insisted. She helped Ye Qingwu into the car and left for the hospital.

At Donghai First Hospital.

The moment the hospital director heard that Lin Yuzhen had come to the hospital because she was involved in a car accident, he immediately arranged

for the bone specialists, internal medicine, the surgical department and every single specialist he could find to attend to her. Ye Qingwu got a shock.

She had only twisted her ankle.

Lin Yuzhen was clearly from a rich and powerful family of sorts.

But compared to those from such families, Lin Yuzhen was completely different.

Ye Qingwu had seen plenty of rich and powerful people in her life. But she had never seen one like Lin Yuzhen. Lin Yuzhen was so innocent and kindhearted that her eyes were all teary when she realized she had hurt Ye Qingwu.

"I'm really alright," Ye Qingwu smiled and gently patted Lin Yuzhen's hand. "You don't have to worry."

Ye Qingwu was the one who should bear more responsibility after all.

"If you're feeling unwell anywhere, let the doctor know. I'll make sure that you're properly taken care of and heal up well," Lin Yuzhen said very seriously. "It's all my fault. Normally my husband drives me but I wanted to try to drive myself today, and I ended up knocking into you."

"I'm too careless."

"Oh no no, it's just an accident," Ye Qingwu consoled Lin Yuzhen, as if Lin Yuzhen was the one who was injured. "Don't worry, the doctors said everything is fine."

After they had checked her injury, the specialists confirmed that it was only a sprain and there were no other problems. Lin Yuzhen finally breathed a sigh of relief.

She decided to let Jiang Ning drive from tomorrow onwards. She was a little traumatized now.

"Where do you stay? I'll send you back," said Lin Yuzhen as they walked out of the hospital.

Ye Qingwu refused any compensation because she didn't want to cause anymore trouble. She had come to Donghai to hide, so it was better to lie low.

Besides, this young lady didn't seem to recognize her at all.

She had removed her cap and sunglasses for quite a while now, but Lin Yuzhen didn't seem to react at all.

This was despite the fact she had released several singles this year and she was really popular.

"I'm staying at a hotel." Ye Qingwu figured that there might be others who would recognize her even if Lin Yuzhen didn't. She had sprained her ankle and couldn't walk, so it was probably safer to take Lin Yuzhen's car instead. "I'll have to trouble you to send me back to the hotel."

"Sure!"

Lin Yuzhen helped Ye Qingwu into the passenger seat, closed the door, then returned to the driver's seat.

After taking a few deep breaths and preparing herself mentally, Lin Yuzhen said, "Alright, we're moving off!"

Lin Yuzhen was still a little nervous, but Ye Qingwu seemed very relaxed and didn't seem worried at all.

After a while, Lin Yuzhen also relaxed. While waiting at a traffic light, she turned on the music so that Ye Qingwu might feel better.

"This song is very nice and I've been listening to it a lot lately," Lin Yuzhen smiled as she spoke. "I feel that this singer has a lot on her mind."

Ye Qingwu was a little stunned by this.

The radio was now playing her latest song, Wish. Lin Yuzhen liked her song?

But Lin Yuzhen didn't recognize her.

"Oh? How do you know?" Ye Qingwu just turned to look at Lin Yuzhen and kept an innocently curious look on her face. "What do you think is on her mind?"

"She's unhappy," replied Lin Yuzhen. "The lyrics of this song are happy, but I feel that she's not really happy on the inside."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Qingwu's heart skipped a beat as she stared at Lin Yuzhen.

She was really unhappy, but nobody knew.

She could sing and dance, so many people saw her as an energetic, sexy and hot singer. But she had become more and more unhappy over time because none of this was what she imagined when she had joined a competition to become a singer.

"How can you tell?" Ye Qingwu continued to ask.

"That's because I was unhappy like that before too," replied Lin Yuzhen. "Even though I smiled at others everyday and I told myself that one day everything will be better, I was really upset inside, and I even felt some despair."

Ye Qingwu didn't say anything.

She felt like Lin Yuzhen was talking about her.

The two of them actually had a very similar experience, so Lin Yuzhen could empathize with her, and could even tell her real feelings from this song.

"But I'm very happy now," Lin Yuzhen continued. "Because the people around me are really wonderful to me, and made me believe that life will really only become better and better. So I'm sure that this singer will eventually become happy someday."

Ye Qingwu smiled and she could tell what Lin Yuzhen was saying.

"Looks like your husband is really nice to you."

"That's right. He's not only nice to me, he's even nicer to my parents."

Lin Yuzhen was a little gleeful about this, as if she was boasting about her husband in front of someone else.

But she also felt that Jiang Ning was worth boasting about.

When the car reached the hotel entrance, Lin Yuzhen wanted to help Ye Qingwu out of the car, but Ye Qingwu refused.

"It's really alright, I can walk to the elevator. Thanks for sending me back here."

"I'm the one who knocked into you but you're actually thanking me," said Lin Yuzhen apologetically.

She pulled out her name card and held it out. "If you run into any problems, just

give me a call. I was the one who knocked into you, so I should take responsibility for that."

Ye Qingwu didn't want to take the name card from Lin Yuzhen, but it seemed like the only person who could understand her feelings was Lin Yuzhen.

She took the name card from Lin Yuzhen and put it into her bag. She nodded, "Sure, be careful on the road. I'll call you out for tea some time."

Lin Yuzhen nodded, "Sure, I'll wait for your call!"

She had a good impression of Ye Qingwu. She was very pretty and seemed around the same age as her. She was classy and carried herself well too. It was impossible to dislike such a person.

Lin Yuzhen left the hotel and reached the office.

The moment she settled down in the office, the marketing director knocked on the door and walked in.

"CEO Lin, we're ready to release our new product. We're thinking of finding a brand spokesperson, do you have any special requests or requirements?"

A brand spokesperson?

Their new product was a skincare product aimed at younger ladies. So they would probably have to find someone young and pretty to be a spokesperson.

She immediately thought of the singer who sang the song Wish. She would probably be suitable.

"Your department can go ahead and decide on what's best and discuss the budget yourself. If you're asking for my opinion, then perhaps you could ask if the singer of the song Wish is willing to take on this role? I think she should be quite suitable."

"Sure. Rest assured, CEO Lin, I'll contact the singer right now."

Lin Yuzhen really wanted to meet this singer. She wanted to know why she was feeling so sad despite singing such a happy song.

Meanwhile.

In the hotel.

Ye Qingwu had rubbed ointment on her ankle and took a seat on the sofa.

She felt that Lin Yuzhen was a very interesting person. If she got to know Lin Yuzhen before becoming a singer, then they might have become good friends.

But now she had only come to Donghai to hide, and she would go back once everything was settled.

She probably wouldn't have the chance to ask Lin Yuzhen out for tea.

She took her phone out and dialed her manager's number. It took several rings before someone picked up the phone.

"Qingwu?" a voice came through the phone.

"It's me. How's everything? Has the company settled this case?" she asked a little anxiously.

If this matter was not settled yet, she couldn't go back at all. That Young Master Su had caused the downfall of so many female stars, so if she went back now, she was definitely doomed.

"Settled the case?"


Suddenly an ambiguous sounding voice came through the phone. Ye Qingwu's expression immediately changed. That voice belonged to Young Master Su!

She got a shock and started to panic. Her manager was being threatened by Young Master Su?

Her whereabouts were going to be exposed too!

"Ye Qingwu, how do you intend to settle this?" The voice over the phone was filled with disdain. "You've finally decided to call. Have you located her? Donghai? Alright! Ye Qingwu, you'd better wait for me in Donghai!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!



DUUU...

The other side hung up on her.

Ye Qingwu's face started to pale. How did things turn out like that?

Even her company couldn't settle this matter?

That Young Master Su was not going to rest until he had destroyed her.

Run!

That was the only word in Ye Qingwu's mind right now.

She immediately gathered her clothes from the closet and was going to take this chance to leave Donghai before Young Master Su got here.

Ye Qingwu accidentally pushed her bag over and Lin Yuzhen's name card fell out.

She looked at the name card and was frozen for a few moments.

"Lin Group CEO, Lin Yuzhen?"

They didn't introduce themselves earlier because Ye Qingwu didn't want to reveal her identity, while Lin Yuzhen completely forgot because she was too anxious.

But now when Ye Qingwu saw this name card and the words 'Lin Group', she suddenly recalled what her manager told her.

Her manager had told her before this that Donghai was known to be a forbidden territory and nobody was allowed to make any trouble in this city. And the most successful company in Donghai right now was Lin Group, and was very extremely reputable in Donghai.

She thought about how almost every specialist in the hospital earlier had come rushing out because Lin Yuzhen had arrived.

That was enough to prove that Lin Yuzhen was no ordinary person.

"Should I ask her for help?" This thought flashed through Ye Qingwu's mind. "No, Yuzhen is a very kindhearted lady and I can't drag her down with me."

The Su family was very powerful in Shenghai and even her own company's boss couldn't settle him. So how was Lin Yuzhen going to deal with him?

No matter how powerful Lin Group was in Donghai, Lin Yuzhen was merely an innocent and kindhearted young lady.

Dragging her into this issue was only burdening her. Ye Qingwu didn't want to do such a thing.

She couldn't think about so many things now. She quickly packed her things and called the hotel reception to book a flight for her. But the hotel reception informed her that she was not allowed to book any tickets out of Donghai.

If she couldn't buy flight tickets nor train tickets, then she couldn't leave Donghai quickly anymore!

This Su family was going too far!

"A bus then!"

Ye Qingwu was really beginning to feel afraid.

Young Master Su was definitely the type who wouldn't take this lying down. He wasn't going to stop until he got Ye Qingwu in bed with him.

And no artiste who slept with him met a good end either.

Ye Qingwu's eyes were a little bloodshot as she grabbed her bag and didn't even dare to bring too many things with her. She hobbled into the elevator and felt both nervous and uneasy.

What should she do now?!

DING!

The elevator reached the ground floor.

Ye Qingwu walked to the reception to check out. Her cap and large sunglasses covered nearly her entire face.

Suddenly, someone tapped her shoulder from behind.

"AHH!" Ye Qingwu let out a panicked scream.

The Su family had sent someone over so quickly!

"Oh no, did I scare you?"

She turned to find that it was Lin Yuzhen.

What was Lin Yuzhen doing here?

Lin Yuzhen was a little apologetic. She didn't mean to scare Ye Qingwu.

"I'm really sorry about that! I forgot to ask for your name and I didn't know which room you were staying in, so I had to wait in the lobby," she said with a sheepish smile. "I just remembered that my friend's club has a new steam massage machine that can help with blood circulation and reduces swelling, so I wanted to bring you there. I guarantee that you'll be able to walk normally from tomorrow onwards!"

Lin Yuzhen actually remembered this.

After finishing up everything she had on hand, she quickly rushed over to the hotel.

Then she suddenly realized that she had forgotten to ask Ye Qingwu for her name and didn't know which room she was staying in either. The reception couldn't give this information to her, so she had no choice but to just wait for her in the lobby.

And she really managed to run into Ye Qingwu.

But she seemed to be checking out.

Ye Qingwu was in a daze.

She didn't think she would run into Lin Yuzhen again, and she couldn't believe that Lin Yuzhen had come here because she knew of a good way to help with her injury.

She wanted to reject Lin Yuzhen's offer when the hotel receptionist suddenly whispered cautiously with an excited face, "You're Ye Qingwu?"

"The popular singer of the song, Wish? That Ye Qingwu?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The receptionist was very excited and quickly pulled out a pen and paper. "Could I...could I get your signature?"

Ye Qingwu?

The one who sang the song Wish?

Lin Yuzhen was stunned when she heard this name. She looked at the young lady in front of her whose sunglasses had fallen off from her fright earlier.

She was Ye Qingwu? The singer of the song Wish?

Lin Yuzhen felt that this world was too small.

She had just recommended this song to Ye Qingwu in the car earlier, and even said that the singer was probably an unhappy person. She suddenly felt like she had made a terrible mistake!

Ye Qingwu didn't say anything and just put a finger to her lips to tell the receptionist not to make too much noise. She took the pen and paper, signed it, and returned it to the receptionist.

The receptionist could barely hold her excitement in, but she kept quiet because she knew this was already against company policy. So she quickly helped Ye Qingwu to check out.

"You're Ye Qingwu?"

Lin Yuzhen's face was a little red and she was a bit embarrassed to ask.

"That's right," Ye Qingwu tried not to laugh when she saw Lin Yuzhen's expression. "I didn't mean to hide it from you."

"I know, celebrities have to keep a low profile whenever they go out, otherwise you'd get mobbed by fans."

"But you didn't recognize me at all!"

Ye Qingwu was a little sad. She was pretty famous now and even the hotel receptionist recognized her immediately, but Lin Yuzhen had no idea.

Then again, as the CEO of Lin Group, Lin Yuzhen was probably really busy. She only listened to pop music in the car and wouldn't have the energy to notice singers or celebrities.

"Yuzhen, thanks for being concerned about my injury, but I can't go to the club with you," Ye Qingwu went straight to the point. "I have something urgent to

attend to and I must leave Donghai right now. You can just send me to the bus terminal."

"Oh? Why are you in such a hurry?" Lin Yuzhen looked at Ye Qingwu. She wasn't dumb. She could tell that Ye Qingwu was a little panicky and even seemed fearful.

"What's happened? Is there anything I can help you with?"

"Someone wants to harm me." Ye Qingwu knew that Lin Yuzhen was a kind person and wouldn't let her leave if she didn't tell her the truth. "I can't afford to offend the other party, and neither can you, so I don't want to drag you into this."

"You can just send me to the bus terminal and I'll leave Donghai immediately."

She said it clearly so that Lin Yuzhen could understand why she was doing this.

There was no need to offend a big shot for someone she barely knew. Ye Qingwu believed Lin Yuzhen would make the right decision.

But Lin Yuzhen was appalled instead.

"Someone wants to harm you?" Her face became anxious. "Are they on their way to Donghai? Then it's too late if you want to take a bus!"

Ye Qingwu didn't have a choice either. She wanted to take a plane or the high speed rail too, but the other party had blocked these options.

It wasn't so bad if she could at least take a bus out, even though she knew that they would catch up with her easily on a bus.

"I don't have a choice, that's my only option," said Ye Qingwu. "Yuzhen, I'm very happy to have met you, and if we get a chance to meet again, I'll have tea with you."

"We can have tea right now," said Lin Yuzhen.

Ye Qingwu was stunned.

Hadn't she made herself clear enough just now?

She was in trouble! She was in big trouble now!

That Young Master Su wasn't someone Lin Yuzhen and a company from a small city could afford to offend! That would be the end of Lin Group!

"Yuzhen, as I said just now, you can't afford to offend those people. Don't do this because of me..." Ye Qingwu started getting anxious.

Lin Yuzhen wanted to protect Ye Qingwu, so all the more Ye Qingwu couldn't drag Lin Yuzhen into this.

"My husband says!" Lin Yuzhen shook her head and her face was brimming with pride, "In Donghai, there's nobody I can't afford to offend!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

When Ye Qingwu saw how Lin Yuzhen said such domineering words with such a serious expression but yet with such a soft and gentle feeling, she didn't feel like laughing. In fact she was very touched.

Lin Yuzhen was just a girl!

A very gentle one too!

But she dared to protect her like this.

"Thank you, Yuzhen," Ye Qingwu's voice cracked a little. Regardless of whether Lin Yuzhen could really help her or not, the courage to stand up for her was enough to touch Ye Qingwu's heart.

"You don't have to thank me, because you're a good person too," said Lin Yuzhen. "If you were a bad person and I knocked into you, then you would have asked me for a huge amount of compensation, wouldn't you?"

Ye Qingwu chortled. She couldn't hold it in at all.

Try to extort money from Lin Yuzhen?

Lin Yuzhen had decided that Ye Qingwu was a good person just based on this alone.

Of course, Lin Yuzhen didn't know that nobody would dare to extort or cheat Lin Yuzhen of her money, unless that person was tired of living.

Ye Qingwu looked steadily at Lin Yuzhen. She looked at the innocent and kindhearted girl in front of her who had remained untainted by this society.

She was so envious.

"Come along, I'll bring you there!"

Lin Yuzhen immediately drove them to the Nature Club.

On the way there, she found out about how Ye Qingwu refused to follow the implicit rules of the entertainment industry and slapped the third son of the Su family, thereby offending him and that was how she ended up escaping to Donghai. Lin Yuzhen became even angrier after hearing all this.

How could they bully a girl like that?

It was little wonder she could hear Ye Qingwu's unhappiness in her singing.

Lin Yuzhen immediately thought of the time before she met Jiang Ning. At that

time, she was still working for the old Lin Group and had suffered so much bullying and humiliation. She felt upset just thinking about it.

No matter what, she was going to help Ye Qingwu and she wasn't going to let Ye Qingwu be bullied!

The car reached Nature Club and a staff immediately came forward.

"Boss Yuzhen!" greeted a staff politely once the door opened.

He was very respectful but not fearful. This surprised Ye Qingwu.

"Thanks for the hard work!" Lin Yuzhen nodded and passed her car keys to the staff with a smile, then walked in with Ye Qingwu.

"Hello Boss Yuzhen!"

"Hello Boss Yuzhen!"

Everyone who saw Lin Yuzhen would greet her with respect and politely, but none of them was fearful.

Ye Qingwu was a little confused. Lin Yuzhen was clearly no ordinary person and these people were therefore very respectful towards her. But normally the subordinates of such people were very fearful.

But these people didn't look fearful at all. They only had respect and they clearly liked her.

After a while, she realized that every time someone greeting Lin Yuzhen, she wouldn't brush them aside but also politely nod in response and smile.

She could even call all their names!

Ye Qingwu immediately understood why they liked her so much now.

"Hello Miss Zhang, I've brought my friend here to use the steam massage machine," said Lin Yuzhen to the staff on duty.

"Sure, I'll arrange it immediately!" Miss Zhang replied with a big smile. "We received some seasonal fruits this morning, I'll send it to your room."

"Thank you Miss Zhang!"

Lin Yuzhen pulled Ye Qingwu along to the room that was specially reserved for her use.



Nature Club was huge, and it was the largest recreational club in Donghai. This was also a place that Huang Yuming had specially arranged for Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen to rest and relax. The security and service of this club was the best he had.

"Does this place belong to your company?"

Ye Qingwu looked at the beautiful interior décor of the room and she could tell that this was a very high end place. There weren't many places like this even in a huge city like Shanghai.

"It belongs to my friend."

Lin Yuzhen knew this club belonged to Huang Yuming.

But she also knew that Huang Yuming shared a space under a bridge with Jiang Ning before and was one of his Beggars' Sect buddies, so she didn't have to be too formal with him. "Help yourself and make yourself at home, don't worry."

Ye Qingwu didn't whether to laugh or cry. This place belonged to Lin Yuzhen's friend, but Lin Yuzhen just treated the place like she owned it. This must be a really good friend of Lin Yuzhen's.

HUUUU...

The steam massage machine was all ready. The two of them lay on the massage bed and the masseuse was massaging them very seriously.

"Your foot is the most important. Don't worry, Miss Liu's technique is excellent and I guarantee that you'd be up and about tomorrow."

Lin Yuzhen turned and noticed that Ye Qingwu still looked nervous. She couldn't hide the worry on her face.

"Don't worry, it's very safe here. Nobody can make trouble here."

Jiang Ning wasn't the one who said this. Huang Yuming told her this, so that she be assured and really relax in this club. "I'll call my husband and let him know."

Ye Qingwu nodded and slowly relaxed.

She was really grateful to Lin Yuzhen, regardless of whether Lin Yuzhen could help her or not. She had nowhere else to go.

Perhaps she could hope to live if she remained here.

Ye Qingwu had already decided in her heart that if any trouble appeared and Lin Yuzhen really couldn't help her, then she wouldn't drag Lin Yuzhen down with her.

After she had sorted out her thoughts, she started to relax. If everything wasn't going to end well, then she might as well relax and enjoy herself right now.

At the same time.

At Harmony View's bungalow estate.

All the furniture was brand new. CEO Wan sponsored all the items and had picked the best ones. He had also arranged for an estate management team to specially take care of all the cleaning, washing and other services they might require.

When Su Mei saw the huge house, her eyes started tearing and she couldn't suppress the feelings in her heart.

"I never imagined that one day, I might be able to live in a bungalow."

She was laughing and crying at the same time.

Before this, the three of them were still squeezing in that rundown apartment that was too cold in the winter and too warm in summer. It was a common sight to see insects and rats, and it was easy for thieves to break in. But now they were going to live in such a large bungalow!

"Mum, then you have to start imagining now, and imagine as much as you want," Jiang Ning quickly smiled in reply. "Not just about living in a bungalow. You could imagine yourself on a cruise or anything you want. As long as you want it or you like it, I'll make it come true."

Su Mei couldn't help but laugh through her tears.

"Silly boy, I'm already so old. Why would I imagine so much? I just hope that my family will live harmoniously and everyone lives well and healthily."

"Mum, what do you mean by already you're so old?" Jiang Ning asked very seriously. "If you think you're old, then those really old aunties would be so jealous of you."

Su Mei whacked Jiang Ning on the head. "You always know how to say nice things to me!"

"Tsk, why aren't you my real son?"

After a pause, she continued, "But it's better that you're a son-in-law. If you were my son, you might make me die from anger!"

Jiang Ning laughed loudly.

The phone rang and it was from Lin Yuzhen. Jiang Ning picked up and heard Lin Yuzhen's voice on the other end.

"Hubby, I got to know a friend and someone wants to bully her. Can I protect her?"

Lin Yuzhen asked a little cautiously, then told Jiang Ning what happened.

She was a little nervous, since she had acted out of anger earlier. So when she started recounting what happened to Jiang Ning, she felt a little anxious.

When Jiang Ning heard Lin Yuzhen say that he told her before that there was nobody in Donghai that she couldn't afford to offend, he fell silent for a moment.

This silence made Lin Yuzhen even more nervous.

"Hubby, did I get myself into trouble?"

"I just want to ask you. When did I say something like that?"

"What?" Lin Yuzhen started to panic.

Didn't Jiang Ning say that before?

She remembered him saying that! Did she remember wrongly?

"I didn't say Donghai," Jiang Ning replied in a domineering voice. "Remember this well. What I said was, there's nobody you can't afford to offend in THE WHOLE WORLD."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning then hung up the phone and turned to Su Mei. "Mum, Yuzhen got to know a new friend. Want to invite her over to our place for dinner?"

"New friend?"

Su Mei was pleasantly surprised. Lin Yuzhen had been working hard to support the family all these years and never had time to make friends.

She had always felt bad for her own daughter.

So when she heard that Lin Yuzhen had a new friend, she quickly nodded. "Sure! I'll buy some groceries in a while and whip up some of my best dishes!"

Jiang Ning nodded and walked away. Based on Lin Yuzhen's description, this wasn't much trouble at all.

But the other party was from Shenghai. That was a city that was rather close to the north.

The expansion in the southeast region was going according to Lin Group's plan. The Yang family was wiped out and the illegal circle of Jianzhou had also been cleared out. It would take a while to reinstate order in the area.

Huang Yuming had already brought men over to get it done.

So Jiang Ning wasn't worried and was in no hurry.

Everything revolved around Lin Group's expansion since he was going to make sure Lin Yuzhen became more outstanding than that woman.

If those people from Shenghai were coming over now, that would make things interesting.

Lin Yuzhen was still in a daze after Jiang Ning hung up the phone.

Ye Qingwu was lying next to her and had heard what Jiang Ning said too. She was also equally stunned.

She could tell that Lin Yuzhen was a little nervous and afraid that she would get scolded when she told her husband what happened. But instead of getting angry with Lin Yuzhen for getting into such big trouble, he was angry because Lin Yuzhen had remembered what he said wrongly!

He said that there was nobody in the world that Lin Yuzhen couldn't afford to offend!

What domineering words!

Ye Qingwu turned to look in shock at Lin Yuzhen. "Yuzhen, that...was your husband?"

She felt like she was in a dream. She had seen many rich and powerful people, but she had never met anyone who dared to say such arrogant words!

Lin Yuzhen herself was in a daze. She nodded gently.

So Jiang Ning had said the whole world. How did she remember it as just Donghai? She must have been stupid.

"Does your husband have a middle name?" Ye Qingwu asked both curiously and nervously. "Like is Arrogance his middle name?"

"AH!" Lin Yuzhen caught the joke and couldn't stop laughing. "Oh no no, his name is Jiang Ning! No middle name!"

Judging from Jiang Ning's tone of voice, she knew that this matter was definitely not a problem to him.

So much for being worried earlier. She didn't have to worry at all.

Lin Yuzhen relaxed, while Ye Qingwu's anxious feelings also faded.

She was suddenly very curious to find out what sort of person Lin Yuzhen's husband was.

At the same time.

Donghai International Airport.

Several men stepped out of the plane with sinister expressions on their faces.

The leader of the men even had a scar on his eyebrow. He spoke into the phone, "Young Master Su, we've located her! Her phone has not moved at all."

On the other side of the phone was Su Mingquan. You could still see a faint scratch on his face that was caused by someone's fingernails, and his eyes were spewing fire.

"Bring that whore back! I'm going to kill her!" he shouted through clenched teeth.

"Young Master Su, Donghai is allegedly a forbidden territory and nobody is allowed to make trouble here. Do you want to use one of your connections to say hello first?"

Everyone already knew about Donghai's reputation as a forbidden territory and they were famous in the southeast region. Even people all the way in Shenghai had heard all about it.

"Forbidden territory? Bullshit!"

Su Mingquan wasn't bothered by this at all. It was just a tiny city, so how could it be a forbidden territory? It was fine if they managed to trick the people in the southeast, but how could they pretend to be all high and mighty in front of a major city like Shenghai?

The Su family had never been worried about any forbidden territory!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Just do what you're supposed to and bring that woman back!" Su Mingquan said coldly. "What nonsense is this about being a forbidden territory? Did they think they're really something now? In front of Shenghai, they're just a piece of shit!"

"Yes, Young Master Su!" replied his men immediately.

It was true that the cities in the southeast region along the coastline were nothing compared to Shenghai and the other major cities in the north in terms of status.

Even though Donghai was allegedly a forbidden territory and had risen up recently, its history was certainly nothing to shout about.

The men were just being careful, so they wanted to check with Su Mingquan first before getting into unnecessary trouble, otherwise the Su family might end up killing them off. But now it seemed like Su Mingquan didn't have regard for this so called forbidden territory at all.

After hanging up the phone, Su Mingquan looked at Ye Qingwu's manager kneeling before him. The manager had a face filled with terror.

He laughed coldly. "Did you think that I wouldn't dare to touch her if she's gone hiding at that shitty forbidden territory called Donghai?"

The manager trembled and was injured all over.

"Young Master Su, Qingwu is young and immature, don't hold it against her!"

PAK!

Su Mingquan slapped his across the face. Blood spilled out from the manager's mouth.

"Even your boss doesn't dare to speak to me like this!" Su Mingquan smiled coldly and his face was filled with nothing but contempt.

"I'm telling you, I'm going to sleep with this Ye Qingwu. I'm not just going to bed her, I'm also going to sponsor some movies for her. Isn't it a waste if she doesn't film a few epic movies?"

The manager's face instantly paled at these words.

Su Mingquan wasn't talking about decent movies at all.

He was going to destroy Ye Qingwu!

Ye Qingwu would never walk with her head high after filming such movies!

Clothes that were taken off couldn't be put back on!

"Young Master Su! Young Master Su!" the manager quickly pleaded, "You're a magnanimous person, please let her off, please..."

He tried to grab Su Mingquan to beg him to let Ye Qingwu off, but his men held onto him and the manager couldn't reach Su Mingquan at all.

"Throw him out! Throw him out!" Su Mingquan shouted impatiently. "Once I'm sick and tired of Ye Qingwu, you guys can have fun with her too!"

"Thank you, Young Master Su!"

The manager despaired after hearing these words. His entire body was limp, like he had lost his soul, as he was dragged away.

He only wished Ye Qingwu could escape successfully. Even if she had to give up her dreams, she had to exit this cruel industry..

Back in Donghai.

After confirming Ye Qingwu's location, Liu Xiaodao and his men knew that she was at Nature Club.

They were surprised. She was about to die soon, but she still had the mood to get a spa session and upkeep her looks.

They figured that she had already surrendered to her fate and decided to make sure she was in top shape to serve Su Mingquan well.

The men got a car and headed for Nature Club. But just as they were about to enter the club, staff came out to block them.

"Apologies, gentlemen. The club is currently not open to guests."

The club did not serve any other guests when Lin Yuzhen was inside. Huang Yuming had set this rule to ensure Lin Yuzhen's safety and freedom of movement in the club.

"Hmm?" Liu Xiaodao frowned, then laughed coldly. "What do you mean by you're not open to guests? Then why did someone go in just now?"

Ye Qingwu was inside this club!

The staff smiled. "Of course that's because that person is allowed to go inside."



"Move aside!"

Liu Xiaodao remembered what Su Mingquan said. In Donghai, they could do whatever they needed to complete their mission. How dare this staff block their way!

"I don't care, I'm going in! No one is to block my way!"

Liu Xiaodao gave a low shout and pushed the staff away with a disdainful expression on his face.

The staff wasn't perplexed by this at all. He straightened himself, glared at Liu Xiaodao and clapped his hands. More than ten men instantly appeared from nowhere and glared murderously at Liu Xiaodao.

"These men are trying to interrupt Big Boss' wife," scoffed the staff as he pointed at Liu Xiaodao.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Liu Xiaodao wasn't afraid of the men surrounding him, but he was a little surprised.

It was just a club in a small city, but there were so many men guarding it.

Who was this Big Boss' wife they were talking about?

Ye Qingwu really knew how to choose a place to hide. So she didn't admit her mistake and she was challenging Young Master Su.

"Interrupting Boss Yuzhen."

The one in charge of guarding the club was Number 13. He was labeled as the thirteenth wolf, but he was one of the top five in terms of ability. When he heard that someone was here to make trouble, he actually got excited.

Brother Gou and a few others went to Jianzhou with Huang Yuming to reorganize the city, so he was here with some other brothers to guard the city.

Nature Club was an important place to guard because it was where Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen came to relax.

And someone actually dared to make trouble here?

"You guys are really bold," Number 13 scowled at them. "I'll give you guys a chance. Get lost NOW!"

Jiang Ning taught them to convince others by their good behavior and excellent manners. They remembered that well.

"Such arrogance! You just work for a club and you dare to speak to me like this!" Liu Xiaodao got angry first and snorted coldly. "So what if you have more than ten men? Get lost, otherwise, don't blame me for getting nasty!"

The moment he clenched his fists, he released a murderous air.

He didn't have any regard for Number 13 or the other men.

PAK!

But before he could attack, Number 13 attacked him first.

Number 13 was as nimble as a monkey and incredibly quick. He had reached Liu Xiaodao and slapped him hard.

This slap sent Liu Xiaodao flying!

He had given Liu Xiaodao a chance to leave while he as was still polite. But this man didn't cherish that chance.

"You...I'm someone from the Su family of Shenghai!" Liu Xiaodao roared angrily as he clutched his face. He didn't expect the other party to suddenly attack.

"The Su family?"

Number 13 frowned.

Liu Xiaodao looked at his expression and thought that Number 13 was now scared. He angrily got up and rushed towards Number 13 to slap him back.

PAK!

But Number 13 simply slapped him again. This time he slapped Liu Xiaodao's other cheek.

Two symmetrical handprints were clearly imprinted on Liu Xiaodao's face.

"AHH!" This slap was really hard. Liu Xiaodao started feeling giddy and nearly lost his balance.

"If you're from the Su family of Shenghai, then you're not from Donghai," said Number 13 calmly. "Big Boss has said that nobody is to make trouble in Donghai. Throw them out!"

"Got it!"

Before Liu Xiaodao could react, Number 13 and the other men had rushed over to knock the other party unconscious. They stuffed them into a car and threw them out at the border marker just outside Donghai.

Their phones, wallets and even shoes had all been taken away. They sat by the roadside and were on the verge of despair.

What crazy place was this Donghai?!

They had already stated that they were from the Su family in Shenghai and they were still beaten up?

Now they had no shoes and no phone. All their clothes were gone and they were only left with their boxer shorts.

They didn't dare to go back into Donghai, but how long would it take for them to get anywhere else?

Even if they wanted to contact the Su family, they needed a phone. They tried to hitch a ride, but anyone who saw them in this state quickly hit the accelerator and drove away, afraid that these men were lunatics.

Liu Xiaodao nearly wanted to cry. What the hell was this place?!

They had never been in such a sorry state before. They were from the Su family in Shenghai! This was even worse than getting killed.

Back within Nature Club.

Number 13 walked to the entrance and politely reported, "Boss Yuzhen, someone came to make trouble and claimed to be from the Su family in Shenghai."

Ye Qingwu immediately became nervous when she heard this.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"We've already chased them away," Number 13 continued. "Boss Yuzhen, don't worry. My brothers and I will make sure that nobody makes trouble for you."

Lin Yuzhen had told him to let her know if anything happened outside. She breathed a sigh of relief when she heard Number 13's report.

"Got it, Number 13. Thanks for the hard work."

"It's not hard work at all."

Number 13 left the room.

Ye Qingwu couldn't believe it. The men sent by the Su family had arrived!

They were here!

They had reached Donghai so quickly, but somehow they had been chased away?

Those were men from the Su family of Shenghai.

"Yuzhen, have they really been chased away?" Ye Qingwu asked nervously.

"Uh huh. Number 13 said they chased them away, so they're definitely gone," Lin Yuzhen replied seriously. "They won't lie to me."

They wouldn't dare!

If they dared, then they didn't need Jiang Ning or Huang Yuming to do anything to them. Brother Gou alone would smash their heads in.

"Don't worry, you're definitely safe in Donghai."

Lin Yuzhen pulled the cover off and felt that her skin had become soft and supple again. This steam massage machine was really good! She wondered if Jiang Ning would feel like kissing her if he saw her.

She got up and looked at Ye Qingwu. "How's it? Is your foot better?"

Ye Qingwu suddenly realized that her foot wasn't as painful as it was, and she was surprised.

This masseuse was really good at her job.

"Thank you so much," she thanked the masseuse politely.

"No need to thank me. You're CEO Lin's friend, so you're a friend of Nature Club

too.”

The two masseuses left the room, while Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu got changed.

Ye Qingwu still felt like she was dreaming. She thought she was in deep trouble, but it didn't seem like much to Lin Yuzhen at all. She could even just relax and take the time to take care of herself while someone was outside handling everything.

Was Donghai really so safe?

After changing, the two ladies walked out and Jiang Ning had just reached.

Lin Yuzhen was so excited when she saw Jiang Ning that she walked over quickly and asked him mysteriously, "Hubby, do you notice anything different about me?"

Jiang Ning looked at her and noticed that Lin Yuzhen's skin was soft and supple. But even if he wanted to kiss her, he had to wait till night time.

So he had to purposely reply her, "No I don't see anything different. I've only discovered that your memory has worsened."

Why did this man bear grudges so easily!

Lin Yuzhen pouted. She had just remembered his words wrongly.

She pointed at Ye Qingwu and introduced her with a smile. "This is Ye Qingwu, my new friend."

"Hello."

Jiang Ning stretched a hand out, shook Ye Qingwu's hand briefly and took his hand back. His gaze never stayed on Ye Qingwu for a moment too long, and his attention was all on Lin Yuzhen as he looked very gently at her.

Ye Qingwu was a little stunned by this.

She was as pretty as Lin Yuzhen, and her figure was possibly better than Lin Yuzhen's because she worked out regularly. Besides, she was a singer, a celebrity.

But Jiang Ning didn't even take a second glance at her.

Other men would have continued to shake her hand without letting go, and would have let their eyes roam all over her, as if they wished they could see

under her clothes.

She immediately understood why Lin Yuzhen had said she had a good husband who was nice to her and made her happy.

Jiang Ning clearly doted on Lin Yuzhen very dearly!

"Nice to meet you, I'm Ye Qingwu," Ye Qingwu nodded. "Also thank you for helping me."

This issue was resolved before Jiang Ning had even appeared. That proved how amazing Jiang Ning was.

"You're welcome. Since you're Yuzhen's friend, that makes you the most distinguished guest of Donghai."

Jiang Ning's voice was calm, but his words were incomparably domineering. "Nobody will dare to bully you here."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning didn't tell her that Lin Yuzhen was the queen of Donghai. As long as you were a friend of Lin Yuzhen, then nobody could harm you within Donghai.

Lin Yuzhen was innocent and kindhearted and never schemed against others. But she wasn't stupid.

Anyone she took as a friend was definitely trustworthy.

Jiang Ning knew this well, so he didn't probe further.

"If you're done here, then Mum said to bring your friend home for dinner with us," Jiang Ning turned to look at Lin Yuzhen. "We're going to celebrate moving into our new house."

Lin Yuzhen nodded.

"Qingwu, come and have dinner at my place. My mum is an amazing cook!"

She held Ye Qingwu's hand and walked out with her as she whispered, "We have to walk faster, otherwise somebody here is going to fight with us for the food later!"

Ye Qingwu was still a little confused and didn't even get the chance to refuse the offer. Lin Yuzhen had already dragged her into the car.

But she also felt bad to refuse Lin Yuzhen. Lin Yuzhen had helped her so much earlier and she was now inviting her over for dinner. Ye Qingwu was really grateful to Lin Yuzhen.

She was a stranger in Donghai, all alone and with nobody to depend on.

In fact, those men had nearly taken her away earlier. If she landed in Su Mingquan's hands...just thinking about it made her despair.

Jiang Ning drove Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu back to the bungalow.

Even though Ye Qingwu knew that Lin Yuzhen wasn't short of money, the décor of the bungalow alone left her staring in amazement.

If she knew that the entire row of ten bungalows all belonged to the Lin family, she would have been even more shocked.

"Welcome, welcome! You must be Yuzhen's new friend!" Su Mei walked out when she heard the car outside and her eyes shone brightly when she saw Ye Qingwu. "What a beautiful young lady!"

"Hello Auntie, my name is Ye Qingwu, thank you for the compliment," Ye



Qingwu responded happily as she nodded her head.

She could tell that Su Mei was a friendly and kind person. She had just walked into Lin Yuzhen's home, but she felt so warmly received by them.

"Take a seat first, I'm almost done cooking."

Su Mei scurried back into the kitchen.

Lin Yuzhen sat down on the sofa with Ye Qingwu, because besides the living room, she didn't know what else the rest of the house looked like either.

Jiang Ning didn't interrupt the two ladies either. Conversations between women were not something that he could be involved in.

He decided to just go to the kitchen and help Su Mei wash the vegetables.

"Your family is so nice," Ye Qingwu said a little enviously. "Your mum dotes on you and your husband loves you so dearly. I'm so envious."

Lin Yuzhen smiled and her two eyes looked like little crescent moons.

She felt very blissful too. Sometimes she felt that this was just a dream, but even if it were only a dream, she was going to work hard and make herself more and more outstanding so that this dream could become reality.

"What about you?" Lin Yuzhen asked while looking at Ye Qingwu.

"Me?" Ye Qingwu laughed quietly and shook her head. "It's a long story and there's no point in talking about it."

She didn't seem to want to talk about her family or her parents, so she changed the topic.

"Yuzhen, I realized that nobody in your family seems to know who I am. I'm actually a little disappointed."

These words really came from Ye Qingwu's heart.

She was considered a celebrity now and had quite a bit of exposure too. Almost every corner of the country was playing her songs.

But even without her cap and sunglasses, Su Mei and Jiang Ning only knew her as Lin Yuzhen's friend and nothing else.

Jiang Ning in particular – his gaze had remained on her for no more than three seconds!

What a failure!

It wasn't that Ye Qingwu had any designs on Jiang Ning or anyone else, but this was really the first time she had been treated so ordinarily. She used to be mobbed by fans the moment she appeared on the streets.

Lin Yuzhen understood what she was talking about and couldn't help but laugh.

"My mum listens to Chinese opera, while Jiang Ning doesn't care for pop music, so they wouldn't have had a chance to listen to your songs." She suddenly felt a little bad for Ye Qingwu. "But my dad listens to pop songs, so he might know who you are when he comes back!"

Ye Qingwu suddenly felt hopeful.

At least she had to live up to her reputation of being a celebrity, right?

Just as they were talking about this, they could hear a car outside the house.

"Number 3, eat with us tonight," Lin Wen said to Number 3 at the door.

"Oh sure! I'll park the car first!" Number 3 didn't try to politely refuse the offer. He knew that if he tried, Lin Wen would get angry instead.

Lin Wen walked into his new home and he was in high spirits. He was even happier after he had heard that Lin Yuzhen had brought a new friend home for dinner.

"Yuzhen!"

"Dad!"

Lin Yuzhen got up and walked over to Lin Wen. She took his bag from him and introduced her friend, "This is Ye Qingwu, my new friend."

She purposely emphasized on the words Ye Qingwu.

Ye Qingwu got up too. She nodded politely and greeted Lin Wen, "Hello Uncle."

Then she looked a little hopefully at Lin Wen.

"Ye Qingwu?"

Lin Wen tilted his head a little as if he was thinking.

Ye Qingwu became even more excited. Lin Yuzhen also looked at Lin Wen as if she was expecting him to say something like, "Isn't Ye Qingwu that really

popular singer?" anytime.

"Qingwu is a nice name! Hahaha! Welcome, welcome!"

In the end, Lin Wen only said that. "Our family welcomes anyone who is Yuzhen's friend! Help yourself and make yourself at home!"

Lin Wen then unbuttoned his sleeves and rolled them up as he walked towards the kitchen.

"Dear, I'm back! I'll help you with cooking!"

After watching Lin Wen enter the kitchen, both Ye Qingwu and Lin Yuzhen exchanged glances and they couldn't help bursting into laughter.

Ye Qingwu would have never imagined that the Chairman of Lin Group, a man of incredibly high standing in Donghai, would help his wife with cooking dinner as the first thing he did after arriving home from work.

Now she understood why Lin Yuzhen said that even though she was unhappy before, she wasn't unhappy anymore.

This family was so heartwarming, it was hard to be unhappy.

The two of them chatted on the sofa and dinner was soon ready. Everyone sat down together for dinner, and the Lin family continued to surprise Ye Qingwu and made her feel envious time and again.

She even realized that Lin Wen and Su Mei treated their driver like their own child and kept putting food in his bowl.

This sort of family atmosphere really made her feel envious.

"During this time you can stay here. You can go back after your side has settled everything," said Jiang Ning after dinner. Ye Qingwu didn't want to trouble them and wanted to refuse the offer, but Jiang Ning raised a hand and said, "It's rare for Yuzhen to find a friend she gets along with so well. There's no way she's letting you stay at a hotel by yourself."

"Thanks, but this matter I have..."

"...is a small matter," Jiang Ning finished her sentence, then walked into the kitchen to cut fruits for Lin Yuzhen.

Meanwhile,

The Su house in Shenghai.

Su Mingquan's face was red with fury as he glared at the mess in front of him called Liu Xiaodao.

"Useless trash! TRASH! TRASH!!" He kicked Liu Xiaodao and shouted furiously, "I told you to get that woman from Donghai, but what on earth did you do instead?!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Liu Xiaodao and his men were disheveled and they were barely wearing anything. They looked more like stray dogs now!

Liu Xiaodao was on the verge of tears. If he hadn't begged a lady manning a roadside stall to let him borrow her phone, they would still be roaming on the roads and the soles of their feet would be bleeding profusely from the rough roads.

"Young Master Su, Donghai is really a forbidden territory!" Liu Xiaodao cried out.

Liu Xiaodao had never suffered such humiliation in his life!

In Shenghai, he worked for Su Mingquan, so he was highly regarded. Everyone in both the legal and illegal circle knew him!

Nobody would have dared to treat him like this.

His clothes had been removed and he had been left by the roadside as if he was a beggar.

The worst part was when he thought about how calmly and disdainfully Number 13 looked at him. It was as if the Su family of Shenghai meant nothing to him.

Donghai was no simple place!

Su Mingquan didn't say anything. He frowned and was deep in thought.

"Young Master Su, this Donghai is not a simple place. Don't do anything rash before finding out more about it!"

PAK!

Su Mingquan slapped Liu Xiaodao's face hard.

"Do I need you to teach me what to do?" he snarled viciously at Liu Xiaodao.

Liu Xiaodao clutched his face and didn't dare to say anymore because he was afraid of angering Su Mingquan.

He was trying to give Su Mingquan a kind warning, but clearly Su Mingquan ignored it. He was the third son of the Su family, so his status was indeed not ordinary. There were very few in all of Shenghai who were of equal status as him.

But that Donghai...it was infamous!

Su Mingquan scoffed and Liu Xiaodao hung his head even lower.

"Go and call that manager, Wang Wei, over here," instructed Su Mingquan.

He was not as dumb as the other spoilt brats in his family. Su Mingquan was quite a smart fellow.

Those men from Donghai still dared to attack even though they had heard that Liu Xiaodao was from the Su family of Shenghai. So even if their background wasn't powerful, they were definitely an aggressive bunch.

Su Mingquan knew that it could be difficult to win these people on their own territory even though he was from a powerful family.

If they were fighting in Shenghai, then he wouldn't have to worry about these people. One finger was enough to squish them.

But if he ended up getting into trouble in another city, he would have ruined the Su family's reputation even if he hadn't gotten into big trouble. His dad would kill him if that happened!

In no time, Ye Qingwu's manager, Wang Wei, was dragged into the room.

He was in a sorry state and his face was rather pale. He curled up into a ball because he was afraid that Su Mingquan would hit him again.

"Young Master Su...I...I've really told you everything..." Wang Wei trembled and he was completely helpless.

"Don't be afraid, I'm not going to ask you anything. I called you here because I need you to do something for me," Su Ming squatted down and smiled. "It's a very simple mission. Once you've completed it, I'll let you go."

Wang Wei gulped. "Young Master Su, please tell me what I need to do!"

"Go to Donghai and bring Ye Qingwu back here."

Wang Wei's expression fell. Su Mingquan wanted to him to go to Donghai and bring Ye Qingwu back?

Wasn't that as good as destroying Ye Qingwu?

He immediately shook his head.

PAK!

Su Mingquan slapped Wang Wei hard. He grabbed Wang Wei's hair and his

face looked threatening.

"Bloody hell, you actually dared to shake your head?!"

PAK!

Su Mingquan slapped him again.

Wang Wei's lips immediately split and started bleeding. Even his teeth felt loose.

"Young Master Su...why do you keep...why do you keep making it hard for Ye Qingwu? She just wants to sing!" Wang Wei clenched his teeth and shouted angrily, "Do you really have to push her into a corner?!"

"MUAHAHA!" Su Mingquan grabbed Wang Wei's hair and said nastily, "That's right! I'm going to destroy her! Wang Wei, are you in love with this Ye Qingwu?"

"Don't worry, once I'm done playing with her, you'll get your chance!"

"I won't go!" Wang Wei yelled. "Kill me if you dare!"


"Oh my my, how touching," Su Mingquan let go of Wang Wei and clapped as he looked at Wang Wei admiringly. "The entertainment industry should give you an award for being a manager who protects his artistes so well!"

Wang Wei didn't say anything but his gaze was very determined.

Su Mingquan kept a smile on his face, but he looked fairly sinister.

He bent down to whisper into Wang Wei's ear with an exaggerated look on his face, "You don't want to go? No problem, I've called your parents over to my place. If you don't want to go, then I'll have to talk them into going instead."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Wang Wei's eyes immediately widened when he heard this. He suddenly transformed into a raging lion.

"Su Mingquan! You bastard! If you dare to touch my parents, I'll kill you! I'll kill you!!"

He tried to struggle free but couldn't move at all because two men were holding him down.

His eyes were spewing fiery anger, and it was enough to burn Su Mingquan right now!

"Hello? Where are those two old things?" Su Mingquan didn't even care about what he said. He pulled his phone out and made a phone call and purposely spoke very loudly in front of Wang Wei. "Use all the methods you need, it doesn't matter if they die, since their son doesn't want to listen to me."

There was nervous shouting coming from the other end of the phone. Wang Wei recognized that as his mother's voice.

"Stop! Stop!" Wang Wei started shouting. "I'll go! I'll go to Donghai!"

He couldn't let anything happen to his parents.

"Wouldn't it have been better if you listened to me the first time?" Su Mingquan laughed. "Don't touch those two old things first."

He hung up the phone and patted Wang Wei's face. "Bring Ye Qingwu back to me and all three of you will be just fine."

He then turned and left with Liu Xiaodao and his other men.

Wang Wei was left sprawling on the floor. He was breathing heavily and was furious, but there was nothing he could do.

"Young Master Su, this is a such a good move!" Liu Xiaodao quickly took the chance to butter his boss up. "If you send Wang Wei to get Ye Qingwu back, she'll definitely come back. That way, we won't have to get involved with Donghai."

Su Mingquan suddenly stopped walking and turned to look at Liu Xiaodao. Liu Xiaodao immediately felt all his hair stand on end.

Had he said the wrong thing?

"Are you saying that I'm afraid of that Donghai?" Su Mingquan scoffed coldly.



"Oh no no! Not at all! How could Young Master Su be afraid of Donghai? You just don't want to stoop to their level!" Liu Xiaodao hurriedly tried to explain.

Su Mingquan scoffed and didn't say anything. But he was indeed thinking the same way as what Liu Xiaodao said – he didn't want to stoop as low as those country bumpkins in Donghai.

He just wanted to use the simplest method to get Ye Qingwu back. As for Donghai...he'd deal with them when he got a chance!

.....

Meanwhile, Ye Qingwu was still staying in the Lin house.

For the last two days, Ye Qingwu and Lin Yuzhen were like long lost friends who had too much to talk about. They could talk about anything under the sun and became best friends quickly.

When Su Yun heard news that the singer, Ye Qingwu, was actually staying in Lin Yuzhen's house, she got so excited that she begged her parents for an entire day before Su Gang finally allowed her to stay one night at the Lin house so that she could see her idol.

The three women chattered nonstop when they got together and Jiang Ning felt like he was having a headache. He had no choice but to head out to the compound and help Lin Wen to loosen up the soil.

Su Mei wanted to plant some vegetables after all.

"Qingwu, I've tried to get your concert tickets several times, but I've never been successful!" Su Yun said with a pitiful face, "I've saved up all my New Year money just to watch you once, but your tickets are way too hard to get!"

"Next time I have a concert, I'll send you tickets." Ye Qingwu was growing fond of this quirky young lady. But after thinking about it, she added on, "If I have another concert, that is."

She didn't know if her company even dared to keep her as one of their artistes since she was in such a situation. It was probably going to be a long time before she got to hold another concert.

"Wow! Thanks, Qingwu! I'm going to be your most loyal fan!"

Su Yun clasped her hands together like she was praying and her face was filled with great devotion to Ye Qingwu.

Just as they were talking, Ye Qingwu's phone suddenly rang. It was a call from

her manager.

"Qingwu, are you still in Donghai? Everything's settled, boss told me to bring you back to Shenghai!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Qingwu was stunned for a few moments. Everything was settled already?

Su Mingquan just sent his men to Donghai two days ago to bring her back but they were chased off by Jiang Ning's men. And now Wang Wei said that everything was settled.

"Did the boss find someone to settle this matter?" Ye Qingwu asked anxiously.

She trusted Wang Wei.

Wang Wei had been her manager since she debuted and he always took good care of her and protected her.

If not for Wang Wei, she wouldn't have had the chance to escape from Shenghai this time, and her life would have been destroyed by Su Mingquan by now.

"Boss used quite a bit of his connections and he's paid quite a high price," Wang Wei sighed over the phone. "But he's finally managed to appease Young Master Su, so once you get back, you really have to thank boss."

"That's great!" Ye Qingwu was overjoyed.

This matter was finally settled, so she could go back to singing.

"I'm already in Donghai. Where are you? I'll go pick you up," said Wang Wei.

"Sure, I'll send you the address."

After hanging up, Ye Qingwu couldn't hide the joy on her face. She immediately sent her location to Wang Wei.

"Everything's settled?" Lin Yuzhen asked after hearing their conversation.

"That's right," Ye Qingwu took Lin Yuzhen's hand. "My manager said that everything's settled. My boss used his connections and paid quite a bit to get everything settled."

Since the one she offended was someone from the Su family, he must have really paid quite a lot.

She decided that when her contract was up, she was going to renew it with the same boss regardless of the terms so that she could earn more money and repay her boss.

"But didn't you say that Young Master Su was a very arrogant and unreasonable man who wouldn't settle for anything?"

Lin Yuzhen felt like this sounded too good to be true.

This sort of person was very hard to handle. Ye Qingwu herself said so before that even though her boss had some connections, he really couldn't deal with the Su family.

So now that everything had suddenly been settled just like this, Lin Yuzhen felt that something smelled fishy.

"Qingwu, Shanghai is a dangerous place to you, you have to be careful. That manager of yours..." Lin Yuzhen frowned.

"He's a trustworthy man." Ye Qingwu knew that Lin Yuzhen was worried about her, so she patted the back of Lin Yuzhen's hand and said, "I've always treated him as my elder brother, and if he hadn't protected me all these years, I would have...well, in any case, don't worry, I know what to do."

She was happy that everything was settled. It was as if the dark clouds over her mind had cleared and she could enjoy the sunshine again.

Since Ye Qingwu was decided, Lin Yuzhen didn't say anymore.

As long as Ye Qingwu was really going to be okay.

"Once I go back, I should be able to resume work soon. I'll tell the company about being your company's spokesperson. I can make a decision on that."

Lin Yuzhen had spoken to Ye Qingwu about being Lin Group's spokesperson, and Ye Qingwu naturally agreed without asking any questions.

Lin Yuzhen had helped her and protected her, so Ye Qingwu was definitely going to agree to a small matter like this.

"YAY!" Su Yun was very excited too. "I can look forward to watching your concert!"

"You are terrible!" Ye Qingwu poked Su Yun's head playfully. "You're going to take your exams soon, so your studies are more important! If you get good results, I'll send you tickets. Otherwise, no deal!"

"Oh nooooo...I have to do well this time!!"

A while later, the security guards outside came to Jiang Ning to say that someone had come to the house and asked if this man was a friend of the family.

Since Wang Wei was a friend of Ye Qingwu's, Jiang Ning nodded and the

security guards brought him in.

Jiang Ning's eyes narrowed slightly when he looked Wang Wei up and down. He could immediately tell that Wang Wei had been beaten up pretty badly and he could even still smell a bit of blood on him. But Wang Wei's face was left completely untouched and it was impossible to tell that he had been beaten up.

Clearly, whoever beat him up knew where to hit him.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Hello, I'm looking for Ye Qingwu. My name is Wang Wei and I'm her friend. Is she around?" Wang Wei asked politely with a smile.

"Yup she is," Jiang Ning nodded and pointed at the door. "You can just go in."

"Thank you!" Wang Wei quickly ran in.

Ye Qingwu had already packed her things and was in the living room to say goodbye to Lin Yuzhen and her family.

"If you have time, come to Donghai again. We've got plenty of rooms for you to stay here," said Su Mei with a big smile.

"Don't worry Auntie, I'll definitely come back. I love your cooking so much, I won't stand on ceremony!"

Ye Qingwu gave Su Mei a hug.

Even though she had only stayed for a few days, she really liked this family and didn't feel like there was any awkwardness or distance between them. It was as if she was in her own house.

She walked over to Lin Yuzhen and took her hand.

"I'm so glad that I came to Donghai. That's how I met such a good friend like you, it's really worth my trip." Ye Qingwu took a deep breath. "Yuzhen, thank you!"

Lin Yuzhen replied, "I'm so glad I met you too!"

Wang Wei walked in and immediately walked over when he spotted Ye Qingwu.

"Qingwu! I've finally found you!" He turned to thank the rest of the family, "Thank you all for taking such good care of Qingwu for the past few days, I'm really grateful!"

Lin Yuzhen and the rest smiled and said it was no problem.

"Got everything packed?" asked Wang Wei. "I've already bought the plane tickets, we can go back immediately!"

"Yup," Ye Qingwu nodded. "Let's go."

Wang Wei picked up her bag, waved to Lin Yuzhen, then turned to leave.

Jiang Ning was standing at the door. He removed his gloves and dusted himself off.

"Going back just like that?" he asked very casually.

"Yup. Everything's settled, so I have to go back."

Ye Qingwu's impression of Jiang Ning was excellent. Anyone would admire a man who doted on his wife so dearly.

Besides, she could tell from the way Lin Yuzhen talked about him that Jiang Ning was a very powerful person!

"If this matter hasn't really been settled yet, do you know what are the consequences of returning to Shenghai now?" Jiang Ning smiled and then looked at Wang Wei. "If you're going to just die, then at least it's a release from hell. But what if you go back to a living hell?"

Wang Wei's expression immediately changed.

Ye Qingwu was taken aback and froze for a while.

She turned and noticed that Wang Wei's face was pale and frowning slightly. She felt that something was wrong.

"What are you talking about?" Wang Wei quickly interjected. "Everything's settled! How else would I be able to bring Qingwu back?"

"Did you think I would do harm to her?" His tone of voice sounded slightly agitated as he dragged Ye Qingwu's hand. "Qingwu, let's go!"

"What's going on?"

Ye Qingwu pulled her hand out from Wang Wei's. She could tell that Wang Wei's voice was trembling slightly and he had never behaved like this before. There was something very fishy about this whole thing.

"Wang Wei, tell me the truth. Are you here to trick me into going back to Shenghai because this matter hasn't actually been settled yet?" Her voice immediately became angry.

Wang Wei clenched his teeth. "That's not true! Let's go now!"

He was about to leave when Number 3 put down the shovel he was using to help loosen the soil and blocked his way.

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes, scanned Wang Wei up and down, then shook his head.

"You know very well that if you bring Qingwu back to Shenghai now, she's going

to live a life worse than death and you'll destroy the rest of her life. Doesn't your conscience hurt?"

Wang Wei's entire body started trembling and he clenched his fists. His eyes immediately teared up and he suddenly started shouting in great distress, "Then what am I supposed to do? He's going to kill my parents!!"

He then collapsed onto the floor and burst out crying.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



Wang Wei started to break down since he had been exposed.

"I didn't want to either! I don't want to hurt Qingwu! But what else can I do?!" He continued to sob miserably and tears flowed down his cheeks. "That bastard from the Su family has captured my parents, so if I don't bring Qingwu back, he's going to kill them for sure!"

Wang Wei was both upset and helpless.

He didn't want to hurt Ye Qingwu nor his parents, and he was on the verge of despair.

Ye Qingwu's heart trembled when she heard this.

She didn't expect things to turn out this way.

"Qingwu, I'm so sorry! I've let you down!" Wang Wei apologized. He knew that Su Mingquan would definitely destroy her or even kill her if he brought her back.

But what else could he possibly do?

"Wang Wei, I don't blame you," Ye Qingwu shook her head and helped Wang Wei back to his feet. "I don't blame you at all."

Wang Wei continued to shake his head.

Ye Qingwu knew that if she didn't go back, then Su Mingquan wouldn't let Wang Wei's parents off for sure. This douchebag was basically forcing Wang Wei's hand.

Wang Wei had no other choice. Otherwise he wouldn't have tried to trick her into going back to Shanghai with him.

"This Su Mingquan is really disgusting!" Lin Yuzhen couldn't help exclaiming angrily while clenching her fists.

He had actually made use of Wang Wei's parents to threaten him! This sort of jerk deserved to die!

Even Su Mei and Lin Wen became angry when they heard this. Was this man still human after using someone else's parents to blackmail them?

"Qingwu, you can't go back. That Su Mingquan is obviously a bad guy and he won't let you off if you go back," Su Mei quickly cut in.

"But if she doesn't go back, then this lad's parents will be in danger." Lin Wen

sighed. This was a difficult choice indeed.

Even Lin Yuzhen didn't know how to advise Ye Qingwu.

"I'll go back," Ye Qingwu suddenly spoke up.

She took a deep breath and squeezed a smile out. "I have to go back."

"I can't drag Wang Wei's parents down just because of what I did," she said very seriously. "I've been to his place and his parents are really lovely people. If they end up meeting a tragic end even though they've done nothing to deserve it, I'll be guilty for the rest of my life."

Ye Qingwu knew what awaited her if she went back, but she had to go back.

She turned to look at Wang Wei. "It's alright, I'll go back with you and make sure your parents will be alright."

Wang Wei clutched his hair. He didn't want Ye Qingwu to go back because he didn't want anything to happen to her.

But...but his parents were in Su Mingquan's hands!

"Qingwu...I've let you down! I've really let you down!" He declared loudly, "No! You can't go back! You must not go back!"

He slapped himself hard twice. How could he have done such a thing?

"I'll think of a way! I'll call the police! I'll gather the media! I'll find a way to rescue my parents! You must not go back!" Wang Wei started shouting. "That asshole isn't going to let you off for sure!"

"I want to go back," Ye Qingwu said with determination.

She had to go back.

She had already decided.

She wasn't going to let anything happen to Wang Wei's parents because of her.

She knew what the consequences of going back were. But she wasn't going to regret this decision.

"Yuzhen, Auntie, I'll get going then. I hope I'll still have the chance to visit you," Ye Qingwu smiled as she said these words, but there was despair in her voice.

"No!" Lin Yuzhen held her back. "I'm not letting you go back!"

Ye Qingwu was obviously sending herself into the fire. There was no way Lin Yuzhen was letting her do that.

She had finally found a friend in Ye Qingwu, and she didn't want to lose her.

"Yuzhen," Ye Qingwu shook her head helplessly.

"If you're going back, then I'm going back with you!" Lin Yuzhen scoffed, "I'm going to see for myself how overbearing that Young Master Su can be!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Wasn't this going too far?

Lin Yuzhen couldn't stand watching Ye Qingwu get bullied, and she definitely couldn't bear to watch Ye Qingwu walk into a fire pit like that. Either way, Lin Yuzhen insisted on getting involved.

"Enough," Jiang Ning finally spoke up after not saying anything throughout this whole thing.

"Yuzhen, don't add to the mess," he frowned. "You aren't of any help if you go, and aren't you very busy at work?"

Lin Yuzhen got upset. How could Jiang Ning say such a thing? Did she really have to watch Ye Qingwu go back and be tortured?

"I'll go."

Jiang Ning's next sentence made Lin Yuzhen widen her eyes immediately.

Wang Wei and Ye Qingwu were still in shock.

Jiang Ning wanted to go with them?

Jiang Ning was going back to Shenghai with them?

"Hubby..."

Lin Yuzhen realized that she had given Jiang Ning trouble again. She always gave him trouble but couldn't help him with anything. She suddenly felt like she was really useless.

Jiang Ning walked over to Lin Yuzhen and gently pinched her nose.

"Silly girl. If you don't work hard, then how are you going to earn enough to feed me?" he laughed. "You have so much work to do, so you can stay here in Donghai. I'll go with Qingwu, so you don't have to worry."

If Jiang Ning went with Ye Qingwu, then Lin Yuzhen definitely had nothing to worry about.

Her husband had never made her worry. Ever since she got to know Jiang Ning, she had never seen him find anything too difficult to handle.

"Ok." Lin Yuzhen nodded obediently.

Ye Qingwu was still in shock.

"I'll go back to Shenghai with both of you." Jiang Ning turned to look at Wang Wei. This fellow was of loyal character, so Jiang Ning didn't mind helping him out. "Don't worry, your parents will be fine. That Su family isn't worth much."

Wang Wei was stunned and couldn't believe his ears. There were very few even in Shenghai who dared to say something like that.

The Su family wasn't worth much?

In Shenghai, the Su family was no ordinary family!

He was worried that a terrible fate awaited Ye Qingwu if she went back, but now he was even dragging her Donghai friends into this situation.

"But...but..."

"Enough of your stuttering!" yelled Number 3, who couldn't stand this anymore. "My Big Boss is going all the way there himself, so what are you worried about?"

Jiang Ning didn't have to go there himself at all. It would only take a few wolves to make sure everyone was safe.

But since Jiang Ning wanted to go, then he wasn't going to just save some people anymore.

"Jiang Ning, thank you."

Ye Qingwu didn't know what else to say. Jiang Ning had already helped her once, and now he was going personally to Shenghai, a place of great danger.

"You're welcome," Jiang Ning replied calmly. "You're like a sister to my wife, so I can't watch you walk into danger like that. If she's worried, then she can't work properly. If she can't work properly, then how is she going to earn money and feed me?"

This Jiang Ning was terrible for insisting that Lin Yuzhen earned enough money to feed him! Wasn't that going too far?!

There was a snorting sound as Su Yun couldn't help but laugh, and the atmosphere was no longer as tense.

Even Ye Qingwu didn't feel so dejected anymore.

Of course she knew that Jiang Ning was just joking around so that everyone would relax.

If someone as amazing as Jiang Ning still needed someone to take care of his expenses, then that would be a really scary world.

Jiang Ning called Brother Gou and a few others to come with him to Shenghai. He didn't need a lot of people.

With him around, Lin Yuzhen and the rest were all assured that everything would be fine. They knew very well how amazing Jiang Ning was. If Jiang Ning said it could be settled, then it definitely could be settled.

The most excited one was Brother Gou. He could get things done alongside Jiang Ning, and they were headed for Shenghai, a huge and complicated city!

"Gou, I'm bringing you along to widen your horizons."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

As a huge city in the north that was known internationally, Shenghai had always been a place of high standing.

There were many people who came to chase their dreams here, because it was said that there were opportunities everywhere. If you caught a good opportunity, you could become rich and famous!

But very few knew that the chances of this happening were very slim.

Most of the resources had already been split up among a few groups of people long ago, and those who came late was fighting tooth and nail over the pitiful bit that was left.

The status they managed to reach after an entire life of fighting was only the beginning for some others.

It was a cruel but sobering reality.

Su Mingquan was the third son of the Su family, so he had a family background and standing that was difficult to attain right from the day he was born.

When he heard from Wang Wei that he was bringing Ye Qingwu back from Donghai, he was very excited and very smug.

It only took a little scheming to make others do work for him. He didn't have to endanger himself and fight with a few stray animals.

"Tell Wang Wei to bring Ye Qingwu to my bungalow."

Su Mingquan got up, and the woman kneeling in front of him immediately bowed her head politely and pursed her lips tightly.

"Young Master Su, I'll get this arranged immediately," Liu Xiaodao nodded and gave Wang Wei a call.

He knew that bungalow was the one that Su Mingquan used to do this sort of thing. Once Ye Qingwu got to that place, nobody would even know what happened to her even if she died.

"Ye Qingwu, Ye Qingwu. Aren't you a singer? Then your moaning must sound very pleasing to the ear."

Su Mingquan laughed loudly.

He went out, got into his sports car and drove off.

Meanwhile,

Jiang Ning and the rest had just entered Shenghai's city center.

Brother Gou couldn't stop staring at how there were skyscrapers everywhere and the roads were crowded with cars and people.

He also couldn't help but feel envious as he saw several sports cars that had to be very expensive.

"There are some cars that are so expensive that if you weren't able to afford it when you were born, then you'd never drive one," Jiang Ning remarked calmly. "But you have a chance now."

Brother Gou widened his eyes.

"You like that one?" Jiang Ning pointed to a McLaren. "Work hard and I'll give you one."

"Thank you Big Boss!" Brother Gou immediately started feeling motivated.

He knew that Jiang Ning had more than enough money to gift him a car that was worth \$10 million. But Brother Gou refused to accept a gift if he hadn't worked hard enough to earn it.

Even though it was thanks to Jiang Ning that Brother Gou was improving and growing stronger, he was also the one getting rewarded for it. Sometimes Brother Gou would think to himself that his life was really good now.

"Mr Jiang, they're calling."

Wang Wei had pulled his phone out when it started ringing, and he could tell it was one of Su Mingquan's men from the number.

"Pick it up," said Jiang Ning calmly.

He glanced at Ye Qingwu and noticed that she was a little nervous. He nodded slightly to tell her not to be afraid.

"Hello?" Wang Wei picked up the call. The person on the other end was Liu Xiaodao, who spoke coldly and disdainfully.

"Where are you?"

"We're in the central district."

"Go straight to Bungalow 3 at Yalin Villa Estate within half an hour. If you're late, then I won't guarantee your parents' lives. Humph!"



Liu Xiaodao wasn't polite at all and just hung up.

Wang Wei became a little anxious. When he thought about how his parents had to suffer such distress and humiliation from these awful people at their age, he felt terrible.

"We'll go to that place now," Jiang Ning instructed.

"Mr Jiang, are we going just like that?"

There were only a few people in the car. Wasn't that sending themselves to die?

Could just the few of them rescue his parents from Su Mingquan?

Su Mingquan had several men who were really fierce fighters!

"If not? You wanna buy a present before going over?" Brother Gou glared at him. "Don't be so wishy washy about this. Big Boss didn't even have to go this time round. It's just a few small fry, I can handle them all by myself!"

He had heard from Number 13 already. Those men from the Su family weren't worth anything at all.

Even if there were twenty or thirty of them, it only took a few of them to defeat them.

But since Jiang Ning was here, then he wasn't here just to rescue some people.

The car turned and headed for the villa estate.

For some strange reason, Ye Qingwu didn't feel as nervous anymore. Jiang Ning was sitting by the side and he was very calm, so Ye Qingwu also calmed down.

She couldn't find a single trace of worry on this man's face at all.

It was as if they were going to see some stray dogs and cats and not a malicious person like Su Mingquan.

Even Ye Qingwu's boss didn't have this sort of confidence and calmness.

"Mr Jiang, I hope that you can rescue my parents. I'll do anything for you!" Wang Wei pleaded with him. "I'll leave this to you!"

Jiang Ning nodded and didn't say anything.

The car soon arrived at the villa estate.

They went through several checks before getting to the bungalow number that Liu Xiaodao gave them. They were only allowed in after they had checked again and again that Wang Wei had only brought this number of people into the estate.

After counting the number of men guarding the villa at every stage of checks, there were more than 30 of them. But Wang Wei's car only had six people, including Ye Qingwu.

If they really started a fight, then nobody would be able to leave this place. Wang Wei was still feeling anxious inside.

When the car stopped, Wang Wei got out to open the door for Jiang Ning.

He knew that he had to count on Jiang Ning to save his parents.

Even though he wasn't very confident and...wasn't very hopeful.

Liu Xiaodao stood at the door and frowned when he saw the other men with Wang Wei.

"What's this? You brought men along?" He snorted and said with contempt, "Are you trying to make yourself feel more powerful?"

Wang Wei's face reddened from anger. "Where are my parents?!"

"What's the hurry?"

Liu Xiaodao glanced at Ye Qingwu and there was an evil glint in his eye. After Su Mingquan was quite done with her, it was their turn.

Ye Qingwu was a celebrity, so her looks, figure and voice were excellent. It would be a pretty good experience to have fun with her.

They had been involved in such activities since they worked for Su Mingquan, especially those who were desperately trying to get famous. But now they didn't care for those desperate ones anymore. After having a taste of delicacies, their tastes were getting pickier.

"Go in," he waved his hand and the main door immediately opened. He didn't bother himself with Jiang Ning since he looked ordinary and didn't catch Liu Xiaodao's attention at all.

But he looked at Brother Gou a little more because there was a familiar feeling about him.

But he couldn't place it.

Jiang Ning and the rest walked right into the bungalow. The house was huge but completely empty. The ground floor was completely bare and unpainted, so it wasn't even renovated yet.

The main door closed behind them, and more than twenty men came down from upstairs. All of them were holding bats and looked at them aggressively.

Ye Qingwu went into a panic while Wang Wei got nervous.

"What's the meaning of this?" Wang Wei yelled loudly. "Where are my parents?"

Liu Xiaodao snorted. "Our Young Master isn't interested in those two old things. He's only interested in Ye Qingwu."

He then waved at Ye Qingwu to go over as he laughed coldly. "So, Miss Superstar! Do you want to obediently remove all your clothes yourself before going up? Or you need me to help strip you and bring you upstairs?"

Ye Qingwu's face paled and she hid herself behind Wang Wei.

Liu Xiaodao immediately burst out laughing and there was disdain written all over his face.

"Did you think this useless bum could save you?"

"He purposely tricked you into coming to Shenghai!"

Ye Qingwu didn't say anything. She bit her lips hard and there was terror in her eyes.

"Enough of this nonsense! Come up with me!" yelled Liu Xiaodao as his eyes grew cold.

"Wait!" Wang Wei clenched his teeth. "Where are my parents? If I don't see them, I won't hand Qingwu over!"

He pulled a small dagger from his pocket and waved it about.

Liu Xiaodao didn't think Wang Wei would bring a weapon. He laughed and he still had nothing but disdain for Wang Wei.

He shook his head and waved his hand. "Forget it. You'd only dampen Young

Master Su's spirits by sticking around here. Bring those two old things out."

A side door opened and Wang Wei's parents were dragged out. The two old folks were still very frightened and their faces were very pale.

They immediately burst out crying when they saw Wang Wei and went running over to him.

"Dad! Mum! I have let you both down!" Wang Wei broke down in tears.

"Enough. Don't make a scene here and just get out," Liu Xiaodao said to Wang Wei and his parents. Then he pointed at Ye Qingwu, "Our superstar gets to stay, the rest can get out!"

Wang Wei refused to move. He wasn't letting Ye Qingwu go upstairs. This was pushing her into a corner!

He continued to stand in front of Ye Qingwu. The hand wielding the small dagger started to perspire.

"Oho, not leaving?"

Liu Xiaodao's face fell and all the men in the house lifted the bats in their hands. "If you don't want to leave, then forget about leaving!"

Swooooooshhhh.

The twenty men immediately surrounded them.

Wang Wei started panicking and Ye Qingwu was terrified.

Her pleading gaze immediately landed on Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning hadn't said a single word since they stepped into the house. After he saw that Wang Wei's parents had been released, he calmly said, "Wang Wei, bring your parents out first."

"But..."

"Go. Number 6, escort them out."

"Yes, Big Boss."

Number 6 immediately escorted Wang Wei and his parents out of the house.

Ye Qingwu was still standing there and Wang Wei started getting anxious. Why not let Ye Qingwu leave the house too?

Wang Wei wanted to ask, but he didn't dare to.

"Who are you?"

Liu Xiaodao eyed Jiang Ning. He now realized that this Jiang Ning seemed to be the one in charge.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything and started walking towards Liu Xiaodao. Liu Xiaodao instantly became wary. He lifted his hand and several men stood in Jiang Ning's way.

BAM! BAM! BAM!

Everything happened too quickly!

Nobody even knew when Jiang Ning made his attack. The men standing in this way were all sent flying and fainted before they could even howl in pain.

Liu Xiaodao's eyes instantly narrowed. "You're a highly skilled fighter!"

He could tell immediately that this Jiang Ning was very powerful.

"Tell your Young Master to come out," said Jiang Ning calmly. "Qingwu slapped him and he refuses to let her go. We have to settle this matter, so let's talk it out."

Liu Xiaodao's expression was grim. After staring at Jiang Ning for a long while, he finally turned and said, "Ask Young Master Su to come down."

Jiang Ning pulled Ye Qingwu behind him. Liu Xiaodao became even more wary and secretly gave the signal for everyone outside to come into the house as well. Since Jiang Ning was a good fighter, they had to take him down with one shot!

While Ye Qingwu hid behind Jiang Ning, she suddenly felt that the man in front of her was like a wall that was thick and strong. As long as she remained behind this wall, no amount of wind or waves could reach her.

In no time, an annoyed and angry voice came from upstairs.

"Liu Xiaodao! What a useless piece of trash you are! It's been so long but she's still not upstairs yet! Are you asking to die?!"

Su Mingquan was in a sleeping robe as he continued to yell angrily, "Where's that whore?!"

He looked down from the stairs and spotted Ye Qingwu. The anger in his eyes

immediately welled up.

It was as if that slap she gave him started to hurt again.

"Ye Qingwu!" Su Mingquan started making his way down the stairs and he looked threatening. "You actually dared to run away! Why aren't you running away now? HUH?!"

"I wasn't the one in the wrong, so why should I run?" replied Ye Qingwu through clenched teeth.

"HAHAHA! You weren't in the wrong? You offended me! That's where you went wrong!"

Su Mingquan didn't have that much patience. He glanced at Jiang Ning. "Who's he? Throw him out, strip Ye Qingwu and send her upstairs."

"Young Master Su," said Liu Xiaodao with a grim face as he pointed at the men who had been sent flying, then pointed at Jiang Ning. Those men had been sent flying so far out that Su Mingquan didn't even notice them when he came downstairs.

Su Mingquan narrowed his eyes slightly as he saw the men on the floor and he looked Jiang Ning up and down.

"Some skilled fighter of sorts?"

He snorted coldly and had nothing but contempt in his voice. His family had plenty of fighters, and some of them were really skilled martial artists even!

He didn't care for these mercenary types.

"Young Master Su, he refuses to let Ye Qingwu go," said Liu Xiaodao.

"My friend, I'd advise you against interfering. I'm definitely having Ye Qingwu," Su Mingquan said with a sinister sort of glee. "I'll tell you honestly, I don't just intend to have fun with her. I'm going to have so much fun, then find a few lowlifes to film a movie with her and make sure she dies from having fun! I'm going to make sure she's famous even if she's dead!"

Such wickedness!

Such malice!

Even Brother Gou couldn't wait to pounce on this douchbag and slap him to death.

Ye Qingwu's face paled even more from fright. She didn't even dare to think of what possibly awaited her!

"What sort of apology do you want?"

Jiang Ning didn't say too much, and completely ignored Su Mingquan's malicious declaration earlier.

"Apology?" Su Mingquan looked at Jiang Ning like Jiang Ning was an idiot. He laughed loudly and walked to where Jiang Ning was standing as he tilted his head and had an exaggerated expression and said, "Do you think an apology is still of any use?"

"This stupid bitch slapped me in front of all my friends! Who the hell does she think she is! She's just a bloody singer! And she dares to hit me? I'm the third Young Master of the Su family!" he bellowed angrily. "This is not just a simple matter of an apology! I repeat, I'm going to kill this woman!"

"Who the hell do you think YOU are? Just because you know how to fight, you want me to give in? You're just a pile of shit!" Su Mingquan had only disdain on his face. "I'll give you a chance. Get out now, or else all of you can forget about leaving Shenghai today!"

Ye Qingwu's face became even paler.

Su Mingquan was notorious and none of the artistes his eye landed on got away unless they had a powerful background.

He was clearly not letting Ye Qingwu go!

Even though Jiang Ning had come along, Su Mingquan didn't care about him at all!

"I think you've heard me wrongly."

Jiang Ning was calm even in the face of Su Mingquan's arrogance. He pointed to Ye Qingwu and calmly said, "I'm referring to you apologizing to Ye Qingwu."

He turned to look at Ye Qingwu. "I'm asking you – what sort of apology do you want?"

"How do you want this son of a bitch to apologize to you before you will spare his life?"